



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

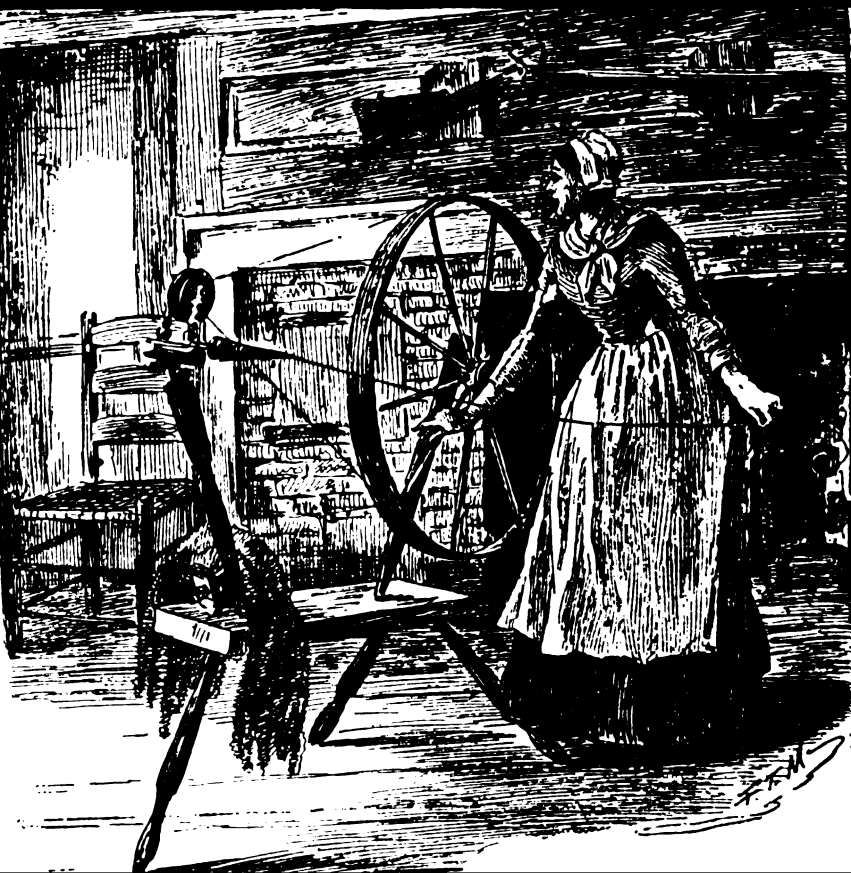
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

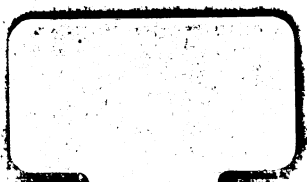
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



# *History of Michigan*

Lawton Thomas Hemans

Digitized by Google











# History *of* Michigan

*By*

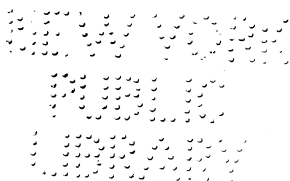
Lawton T. Hemans

Member *of* Michigan Legislatures *of* 1901 *and* 1903

Member *of* Ingham County Bar, *and*

Author *of* Life *and* Times *of* Stevens T. Mason

First Edition

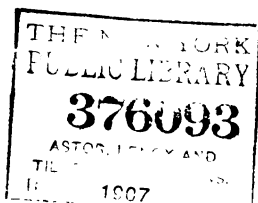


Lansing, Michigan

Hammond Publishing Company, Limited

1906





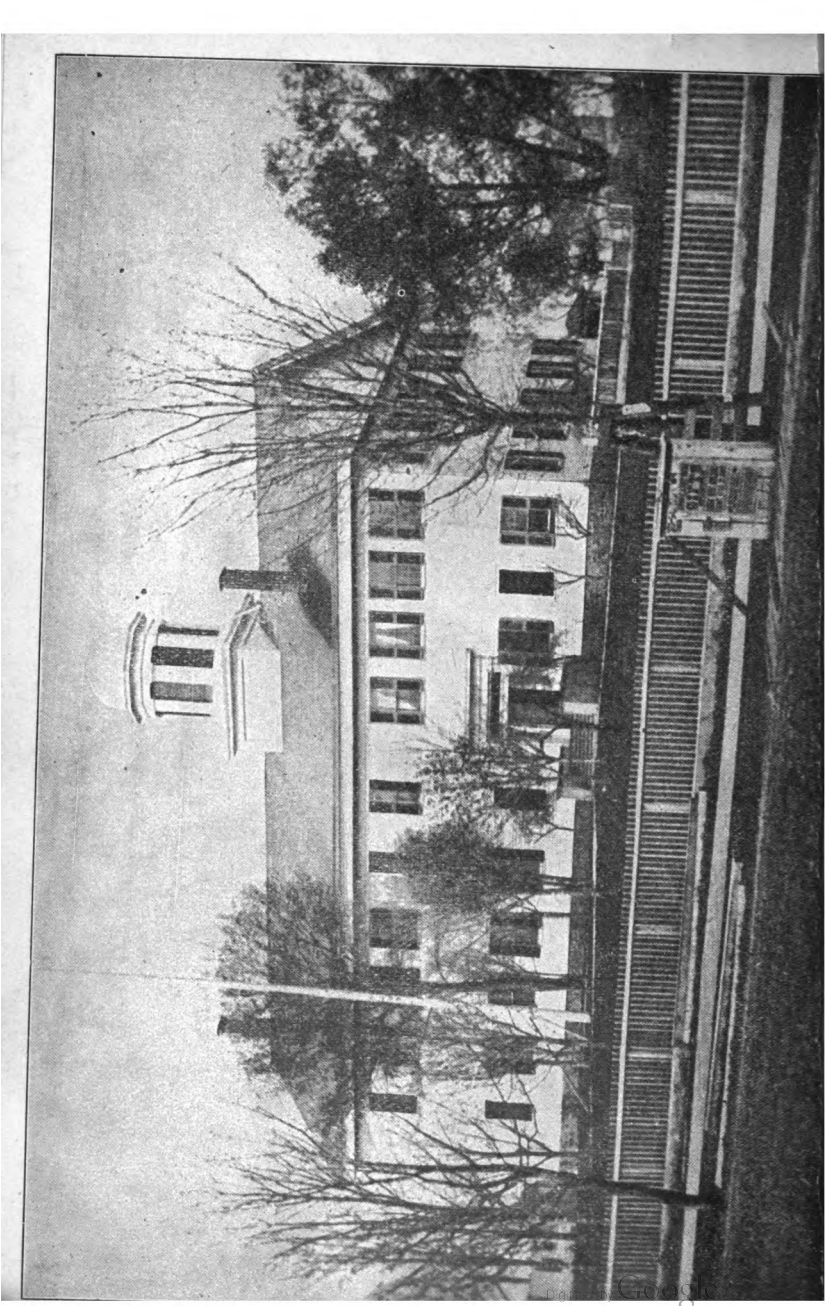
COPYRIGHT 1906  
THE HAMMOND PUBLISHING COMPANY  
LIMITED

NOV 1907  
LIBRARY  
NEW YORK



Checked  
May 1913  
Digitized by Google





## PREFACE.

The twofold phase of our government, state and federal, is familiar to us all. The desirability of a knowledge of the principles and institutions of state concern, as distinguished from those of a national character, is now quite generally admitted. Indeed, it is thought that a familiarity with the institutions common to our townships, counties, and the state, should precede the study of the more distant and complex institutions of the general government. It is likewise generally believed that in the study of history the analogy holds true, and that the youth, before he is required to learn and comprehend the great national and world wide movements of history, should be told the story of his own state. One of the essential equipments for good citizenship is a knowledge of that noble band of men and women who, as pioneers, felled the forests, made the homesteads, organized the townships and the counties, and laid the foundations of the commonwealth. With a thorough knowledge of the history of the state and the principles of its government, the youth is at least equipped to discharge intelligently those civic duties with which he is most intimately connected, while a desire for a knowledge of history and government in their higher and broader relations is also fostered.

It is to fulfill this mission in Michigan that this little book has been prepared. It is dedicated to the boys and girls of Michigan, as it was inspired by the belief that their lives would reflect a higher standard of civic virtue if lived with an intimate acquaintance with those patriots and statesmen whose efforts have made for the state an honorable fame.

No claim is made that the work will disclose many new

historical facts. The pathway already made has been followed, and the works of Sheldon, Lanman, Campbell, Cooley, Hinsdale, Moore, and many others who have written of Michigan and the Northwest, have been carefully examined. Where possible, original sources of information were explored, and the attempt made to marshal, accurately, from all sources, the important facts of our state history in a succinct but connected story.

If critical examination and practical test shall disclose errors of statement and arrangement, both author and publisher will welcome notice of the fact, that such error may be the subject of future correction. Teachers and students will find much material of a supplemental nature in the biennial editions of *The Michigan Legislative Manual* (Red Book) and in the volumes of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, both of which publications should be in every school library. The official lists, character sketches, and statistical tables in these volumes will immeasurably broaden the field to which this little book may open the way.

The author desires to express his indebtedness for the many valuable suggestions received from Hon. Jason E. Hammond, late Superintendent of Public Instruction, and from Miss Zella M. Harvey, at present editor and proof-reader of that department, who have rendered material service in editing and arranging the text for the special field for which it is designed.

Mason, Mich., September 1st, 1906.

LAWTON T. HEMANS.

# CONTENTS

## LIST OF CHAPTERS AND TITLES

	PAGE.
CHAPTER I. The Story of Michigan, Introductory	- 9
CHAPTER II. First Century of French Occupation	- 15
CHAPTER III. The Jesuit Pathfinders	- - - 26
CHAPTER IV. Attempts at Colonization	- - 38
CHAPTER V. The Settlement of Detroit	- - 53
CHAPTER VI. English Occupation	- - 62
CHAPTER VII. The Territory Lingers in British Control	74
CHAPTER VIII. A Part of the Northwest Territory	- 95
CHAPTER IX. Territorial Tutelage	- - 125
CHAPTER X. The Passing of the Territory	- 139
CHAPTER XI. Statehood and Its Trials	✓ - - 155
CHAPTER XII. A Period of Retrenchment	- - 182
CHAPTER XIII. Through Civil Strife to Peaceful Days	- 204
CHAPTER XIV. A Half Century of Statehood Completed	221
CHAPTER XV. The Close of the Nineteenth Century	- 240
CHAPTER XVI. Michigan Today	- - - 254



# HISTORY OF MICHIGAN.

## CHAPTER I.

### THE STORY OF MICHIGAN, INTRODUCTORY.

**The Geography of a Country** has very much to do with the history of the people who come to live within it. Indeed, the geography of a country and the history of its people may be said to be inseparably connected; and we shall find in the story of Michigan that many of those events, in which she and the region of which the state forms a portion have played so large a part, had their first causes in geographical conditions rather than in the designs and purposes of men.

**The Discoverers and Early Explorers** of the American continent were long in learning the extent and physical characteristics of the new world. Even the colonists of the early times knew little more of the country than that it offered an asylum from intolerable conditions in their European homes. They came to the new found land with fixed purposes and intentions, and labored with zeal and energy to carry them into execution; but now that centuries have passed, and their deeds of daring and adventure have been written, we can clearly see that in the larger sense it was

**The Geographical Features** of the country that gave direction to their efforts. The mountains and the plains, the lakes and the rivers, all played important parts in determining the time when, the places where, and the people by whom civilization would be planted on our soil. In many instances it was the configuration of the land and the ease of passage afforded by its river highways, rather than the



well formed plans of men, which shaped the trend of events in those great movements of colonization and empire in the new world during the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. These were movements which embroiled Indian tribes and European nations in years of strife and bloody war, and which live to give color to our present thought and action.

As we view a map of the eastern portion of North America today, its main features are brought instantly to our attention. But a comparatively few miles from the Atlantic ocean and in a rough way parallel with it, back from Gaspé Peninsula where it juts into the waters of the lower St. Lawrence, extends the

**Appalachian System of Mountains.** This mountain range is 1,300 miles in length and from fifty to one hundred miles in width, its southern limit lost in the foot hills and central plain of northern Alabama and Georgia. The range though quite continuous in its character has many local names. It is the White and the Green mountains of New England, the Adirondacks and Catskills of New York, the Alleghany and Blue Ridge of Pennsylvania and Virginia, South Mountain, the Black, and the Smoky of the states further south.

The altitude as compared with that of the other mountain ranges of the continent is not great, averaging from 1,500 to 3,000 feet, with occasional peaks like Mt. Washington of New Hampshire, rising to 6,294 feet, and Mt. Mitchell in North Carolina with its head 6,707 feet above the sea.

**Ample Plains and Gently Undulating Country** to the south and on the sea side of the mountains become more and more restricted until at the north the rugged foot hills seem buttressed by the ocean waste.

At the north the Hudson and the Mohawk valleys give an entrance way through the mountains to the interior, but in

the early days of colonization it was an entrance which the great Iroquois confederacy made more difficult of passage than as though it had been filled with mountain barriers. The Susquehanna, the Delaware, the Potomac, and the James likewise cut deep into the Atlantic plain. They take their waters from the nearby hills and mountains and in neither course nor volume give suggestion of the mighty land endowed with charms and richness, that lies beyond. At the south, rounding the Peninsula of Florida, the Gulf of Mexico with 3,000 miles of coast line and tributary streams gives ready access to a country of vast extent.

The West Indies and the country adjacent to the Gulf of Mexico was destined to be the theatre of conquest and colonization by the Spanish nation, although the maritime nations of Europe, following the discoveries of Columbus, sought to share in the glories of adventure incident to exploration.

**Spain Long Enjoyed** the distinction of being the sole pioneer in colonization. The romantic tales of Balboa, Cortez, Pizarro, De Narvaez and De Soto had been told before 1540. By 1565 they had founded and garrisoned a castle at St. Augustine to guard the coast line of their **Spanish** mighty empire. For upwards of a century the **Explorers** great Mississippi, which her soldiers of fortune had discovered, offered the means of access to a land of vast extent, but she turned from the possibilities of an empire surpassing imagination to search for gold, content if her galleons returned laden with treasures of which the Antilles and the kingdoms of the Incas had been despoiled.

**England Early Manifested** an interest in this new world which the genius of Columbus had made known. On June 24, 1497, John Cabot with his son Sebastian, sailing in a single vessel under a patent from Henry VII., touched the

shore of the mainland of North America. In 1498, father and son in a second voyage again visited the continent and coasted its shore for many leagues.

Both of these voyages are more or less wrapped in obscurity, but there is foundation for the belief that the coast was touched at intervals between points as remote from one another as Labrador and the Carolinas. Sebastian Cabot was for many years in the service of the English king who settled a pension upon him as Grand Pilot of England. Although the jurists, statesmen, and historians of England have always made the discoveries of the Cabots the basis of their claims upon the continent, yet it is evident that they neither comprehended nor appreciated these discoveries at the time, for they allowed John Cabot, the man who had brought them an empire larger than the empire of the Cæsars, to die without preserving to the world the record of the place of his birth, or where and when he died.

Following the exploits of the Cabots, England was so absorbed in matters of internal discord that well nigh a century was destined to pass before she gave serious attention to schemes of commerce and colonization in her new found possessions.

The stories of Spain's golden harvest from her western possessions, and England's pretensions, brought tardy action from her great rival,

**France.** If her cupidity was late in being aroused, it was prompt in execution, for Francis I. of France took time during his Italian campaign to order John Verrazano, a Florentine navigator in his employ, to make a voyage of discovery to the new world. The details of the first voyage of 1623 are wanting. From the second voyage, which started from the Maderia Islands on the 17th of January, 1624, we get the

first description of the eastern coast line of North America. **Verrazano's Voyage** A voyage of fifty days brought Verrazano to the Carolina shore. After a short voyage southward he turned the vessel's prow to the north, skirted the shores, stopping at many places, including the Bay of New York, and reached the northern limits of his exploration on the shores of Nova Scotia.

This voyage was of value as the most authentic source of information regarding the coast of North America. It was the basis upon which the French sought to build the empire of New France, the name that Verrazano had bestowed upon the barbaric wild that lay beyond the rock-bound shore. France thus approached the goal of what was to be her remarkable operation of discovery and exploration, and the place in which her people were to enact in real life the most thrilling pages of American history,—the valley of the St. Lawrence and its contiguous territory.

It is at the northern extremity of the Appalachian mountains that the sea has broken through the mountain wall and made an outlet for the waters of the majestic

**St. Lawrence, the Great Lakes,** and their tributaries. There is a continuous waterway from Anticosti Island to the head waters of the St. Louis in Minnesota, allowing easy access from the sea for a distance of 2,200 miles into the heart of the continent. No serious portage blocks the way in the entire distance except at the Falls of Niagara. More remarkable still is the fact that the tributaries of this great water **Physical Features of the Country** highway in no place take their sources in mountain ranges, but everywhere slight elevations of adjacent country send the waters through the St. Lawrence to the Atlantic, or through the Mississippi to the Gulf.

At the western end of Lake Erie, the southern extremity

of Lake Michigan, or the far western limits of the Great Superior, one is scarce a day's journey from streams that bore the early explorers by gentle current to the Mississippi, "The Great Father of Waters." These natural conditions had material bearing, as we shall see, upon the settlement of Michigan and of the regions of which its territory is an integral part.

#### REVIEW.

How does the geography of any country influence its history? What geographical features of our own country aided in shaping her early history? What comprise the Appalachian system of mountains? How is access to the land beyond this Appalachian system gained? Describe this country. What part of North America did Spain seek to conquer and colonize? What exploration and colonizations gave Spain a right to be called the "pioneer in colonizations"? How did England manifest an interest in the new world? Who were the Cabots? What was the result of their voyages? Mention some things which retarded interest in explorations in the new world. Why was France behind all the rest in starting her explorers? What can you say of Verrazano and the importance of his explorations? Describe the St. Lawrence and the Great Lakes as a waterway.

## CHAPTER II.

### FIRST CENTURY OF FRENCH OCCUPATION.

**Who the First European Was** to visit the inner shores of the Gulf of St. Lawrence will, in all probability, never be known. Before Verrazano had skirted the shores of the continent, the hardy fishermen of Brittany and the French coast had braved the terrors of Old Ocean and found the productive fisheries of Newfoundland and the Labrador coast.

As early as 1506, these brave seamen had discovered and named the Island of Cape Breton. There are records to show **Fishermen** that in the same year one "John Denis of Honfleur" entered and charted some portion of the St. Lawrence Gulf.

The exploits of these intrepid fishermen were at the time quite unknown; of interest only to the restricted circle of the particular Norman, Basque, or Breton hamlet from which the individuals came, and to which they returned to recount their stories of daring and adventure.

**To Jacques Cartier** the world owes the honor of being the discoverer of the St. Lawrence gulf and river. We say that Cartier is entitled to this honor because his expedition was under the authority of his government and the first to make known to his country and the world the knowledge of his discoveries. His exploits are of interest to us because he was the pathfinder of New France, which for more than one hundred and fifty years from his time was to include within its bounds the territorial limits of Michigan and whose priests and soldiers were to be the first to plant the cross and raise the standard of civilization upon its soil.

Cartier was himself a fisherman from the seagirt village of St. Malo on the north coast of Brittany. He was a man of courage, fitted for achievements. We may be sure that his fame as a master pilot had spread beyond the limits of his fisher kinfolk to those high in authority long before the French king sent him on his momentous voyage of discovery.

**There are Historians Who Believe** that Cartier had visited the fisheries of Labrador and Newfoundland several times before he entered the service of his king. It was upon the morning of the 20th of April, 1534, that Cartier and his hardy seamen received the benediction of the village priest, the Godspeed of friends and kindred, and to the ringing of the bells cast off their moorings and were borne with the rushing tide toward the land of mystery and wonder.

**The Little Fleet** reached the Newfoundland coast without incident or delay. Stormy weather in the straits of Belle Isle turned it southward along the western shore. Cartier rounded the Magdalen Islands, coasted Prince Edward's Island, and on the 8th of July made Chaleur Bay, and from the heat of the day of its discovery gave it the name it still retains. At Cape Gaspé he landed, and surrounded by awe-struck natives from the sombre woods and hills, planted a cross thirty-five feet in height embellished with the fleur-de-lis, the first emblem of the Frenchman's faith and authority upon the new found shore. Here **St. Lawrence River and Gulf** impressing two natives to act as pilots he struck boldly across the gulf, skirted the fog-draped shore of Anticosti Island, repassed the strait of Belle Isle, and turned the prow of his ship towards his native land, where he arrived without mishap, unconscious that he had been in the sweep of the mighty river that was destined later to become the highway over which his countrymen were to seek the interior of a vast domain. With the returning spring

**Cartier, Thirsting for More Knowledge** of the mysterious land and having a fleet of three caravels, again sailed westward to seek a passage that should bear him upon its bosom to the still greater wonders of Cathay. As rough weather retarded his passage, it was not until late in July that he reached the strait of Belle Isle. He sailed along the northern shore, and, on the 9th of August, sought shelter in a small bay opposite Anticosti Island. As the following day was the feast of Saint Laurens, that name was given to the bay to be later applied in its present form—Saint Lawrence—to both gulf and river. From there the explorer sailed into the mouth of the great river, which is eighty miles in width, in the hope that he had discovered in the north, as Magellan had at the south, a passage to the waters of India.

This idea may have found confirmation in the statement of the Indian pilots, impressed the year before, who said that they were sailing upon the river without end.

**Entranced by the Wondrous Grandeur** and magnificence of the scenery, Cartier pursued his journey long after he must have been persuaded that he was not upon the coveted passage. He passed and noted the appalling gorge of Saguenay. Passing the Isle of Orleans he came into view of the bold escarpment where now stands the romantic city of Quebec, then the squalid Huron village of Stadaconé.

As he came to anchorage within the basin below the rocky embattlement, the dusky tenants of the primitive village, in frail canoes, gathered about, dumb with astonishment and wonder.

**A Few Trinkets** secured their friendship and they were soon guiding the discoverers by a circuitous path to the promontory from which they had watched the approach of the white-winged monsters.



The summit attained, Cartier beheld for the first time with the eyes of a European that entrancing panorama of natural grandeur which the succeeding centuries was to make the scene of many a tragedy in which the fate of empires was decided.

**At Stadaconé,** Cartier received information that a larger and more important town, known as Hochelaga, was situated farther up the river. Thither Cartier bent his way. On the 2d of October he was received as a guest within the palisade of the native fortress, the object of almost worshipful attention by the dusky throng. Behind the native city ran a height of land symmetrical in proportion and mantled with forest green to which the frosts of early autumn had added tints of crimson and gold.

**Charmed with its Bold, Wild Beauty,** he at first sight gave it the name of "Mont Royale," a name which time has changed to Montreal. The next morning Cartier availed himself of a view from its summit. Beneath him, its limits fixed only by the power of vision, stretched the silent forest georgeous in its vestments of a departing season. He could see the great river that had borne him on its bosom, and he could see where, coming from the northward, the great Ottawa poured in its turbid flood.

**Montreal** Admonished of approaching winter, Cartier hastened back to the vicinity of Stadaconé to stay until the coming of spring. It is not to our purpose to detail the suffering of the winter's waiting, or tell the story

**Of the Subsequent Voyage** of Cartier, in 1541, when in conjunction with Roberval, a Picard seigneur, he made an unsuccessful attempt to plant a colony in the wilderness of New France.

These were incidents which brought little or no new knowledge of the country. Cartier made a map and wrote in

his "Bref Récit," a description of his voyages and explorations, but many years were to pass before the people of his native land were to have a general knowledge of the country.

For a long time the thoughts and energies of the French people were to be absorbed by their religious wars which were not quieted until toward the commencement of the seventeenth century. The fisheries and the occasional barter between fisherman and Indians for their furs constituted for fifty years the only connecting link between France and her western possessions.

**The Time had Arrived** for the commencement of the colonization of the new world. The art of printing was diffusing knowledge of the new country, and France was free from her religious wars and able to direct her energies toward peaceful conquests. Men of speculative genius were turning their attention to the possibilities of the new world.

Among the men commissioned by Henry VI. to prosecute anew the efforts for colonization was a young man of thirty-six years, a native of the sea hamlet of Brouage on the Bay of Biscay. He was a captain of the royal navy, fresh from adventures for his king in the West Indies, devout and high minded, fitted in temperament and physique to be the founder, as Cartier had been the pathfinder, of New France. The name of this young man was Samuel de Champlain, a name that will ever stand foremost in the annals of French-America. It was in 1603 that

**Champlain Conducted a Surveying Expedition** to locate the most available site for a settlement from which to prosecute the fur trade monopoly. Although he carefully examined the St. Lawrence shores from the Gulf to the Falls of St. Louis, the settlement of the company, of which De Monts was the head, was made at the island of St. Croix.

With its failure and the experiences of Champlain in the exploration of the Atlantic coast to Cape Cod, we have little concern, although they did give to the practical mind of Champlain the knowledge that the natural point for the pro-  
**Cham-** motion of the fur trade and the carrying for-  
**plain's Ex-** ward of missionary enterprises was along the  
**pedition** great highway of the St. Lawrence, and not upon the Atlantic coast line.

To revive the failing fortunes of De Monts it was arranged that stations in that quarter should be established. To effect the enterprise two small vessels sailed from Honfleur on the 13th day of April, 1608, one under Pontgravé, to revive a deserted station at Tadousac, and the other under Champlain, bearing the pioneer colony to the wilderness of Canada. Pontgravé stopped as had been arranged, but

#### **Champlain Held His Course up the Majestic River.**

Although the way was not new to him, he again scanned with eager interest the advantages of each point along the rugged shore. Not until he had passed the Isle of Orleans did his enthusiasm kindle at the discovery of a place preeminently fitted for his plans. In the harbor, back of which the bold escarpment of Cape Diamond frowned across the St. Lawrence at the opposing Heights of Levi, he cast his anchor. Here he landed and before the close of day the silence of the forest solitude was broken by the axe-men's blows as trees were felled to build, upon the deserted site of Stadaconé, the cabins and palisade that were to mark the modest beginnings of Quebec.

Thus Champlain's colony was founded a twelve months before Henry Hudson sailed from Amsterdam on his voyage for the discovery of the river which bears his name, and but a year after the planting of the first English colony at Jamestown.

**At the Time of the Founding of Quebec**, a savage warfare was in progress between the Huron nation, whose tribal **Iroquois** home was easterly of the lake which bears its **Indians** name, and the atrocious Iroquois whose confederacy held despotic sway over the territory of the present state of New York.

The interests of the French were in common with the Hurons, for the St. Lawrence and its tributaries brought them by easy passage with canoe loads of furs, the barter for which became the life of the settlement.

• **Champlain Cast His Lot** with the Algonquins in their struggle against their hereditary foe. In the early spring of 1609, joining forces with a war party of Hurons, he ascended the Richelieu to become the discoverer of the beautiful lake which bears his name. Near the present site of Ticonderoga they surprised and dispersed a Mohawk village.

The savages fled panic stricken at the sound of muskets, which they had never before heard, and at whose report mysterious death was spread among them.

**This was an Incident** that cemented friendship between the French and their Algonquin neighbors. At the same time it brought the implacable hatred of the Iroquois, a hatred which was destined to be handed from the savage father to the no less savage son for many succeeding generations.

A man of Champlain's temperament was not long satisfied with the accomplishments at Quebec. He longed to know **Stories of the Regions Beyond** more of the regions in which the great rivers took their sources, of which the savages were constantly recounting tales of surprising wonder.

By 1611, he had made the present site of Montreal a meeting place where Indian and trader could come for mutual barter, and where he could exert a more potent influence over the tribes of the interior.

**The Intrigues of Avaricious Traders** and the unsettled policy of the home government caused him occasional journeys to his native land, with consequent loss of influence over his immediate command and over the Indians, whose homes were by distant lakes and streams. The former he governed **Champ-** by measures firm and decisive; the latter he **lain's Diffi-** guided by acts of friendship and infinite pa- **culties** tience.

By 1613, he had followed the course of the Ottawa far into the interior. Again in 1615, following the trail of La Caron, a Recollet priest, by the Ottawa, the Mattawan, and the Lake Nipissing portage, he found his way to Georgian Bay and from Thunder Bay penetrated to the mission in the interior. He thus looked upon the watery waste of "Mer Douce" of the French maps, the Lake Huron of our own. In the same year he accompanied a war party against the

**Iroquois of Western New York**, thus learning of the passage to the upper country by means of the Trent and Lake Simcoe, discovering the great Lake Ontario. After having crossed to its southern shore, and giving battle without gaining the victory, he returned with his allies to spend the winter in their lodges. This was to be the last achievement in exploration of this noted man. He returned to his companions at Quebec in the spring of 1616, after all believed him dead.

Thus five years before the Mayflower discharged her living freight upon the strand by Plymouth Rock, did this man send the gospel and the cross to the untutored savage of the interior and by personal visitation gain his loyalty and friendship.

**When Once Established** the chances of success were with the Plymouth colony, for upon the day of their landing they were a self-reliant community. They were a community

**Comparison of French and English Colonies** actuated by a high ideal, a community of families, of which Quebec after twelve years of existence could boast but two and one of these was the family of Governor Champlain himself, he having in that year brought over his beautiful wife, whom as a child he had married five years before.

**Into New France** was now about to be introduced a new factor which not only aided in its further exploration but also retarded its development. At the founding of Quebec its religious ministrations were in the hands of Recollet priests; but the Huguenot and Catholic joined in its enterprises under complete tolerance. This was to be changed.

**Political Conditions in France** had brought to the surface an ambitious statesman in the person of the great soldier, Cardinal Richelieu. Anxious to revivify the name and glory of Old France, he applied himself energetically to the problems of the western world. He created the office of Grand Master and Superintendent of Navigation and Commerce, and himself filled this position.

To end business and religious discords he organized the famous "Company of the Hundred Associates" whose two-fold, paramount aim was to be the traffic for furs and the **Richelieu's Plan** conversion of the Indian by Jesuit priests and teachers. It was under this company that the policy of feudal seigniorship was established to place a further blighting influence upon the designs and aspirations of Champlain, who longed for colonists and was given priests and soldiers.

**His Later Years** were busied with the cares of administration, but he delegated to others the explorations he would have gladly made himself.

Thus we see Étienne Brulé, his companion and interpreter, at the time of discovery of "Mer Douce," the first to penetrate beyond its waters, returning with a nugget of copper

and with a description of the country, which warrant the **assumption** that he was the first European to set **Discoveries** foot on the soil of Michigan and that before **of Nicollet** 1629.

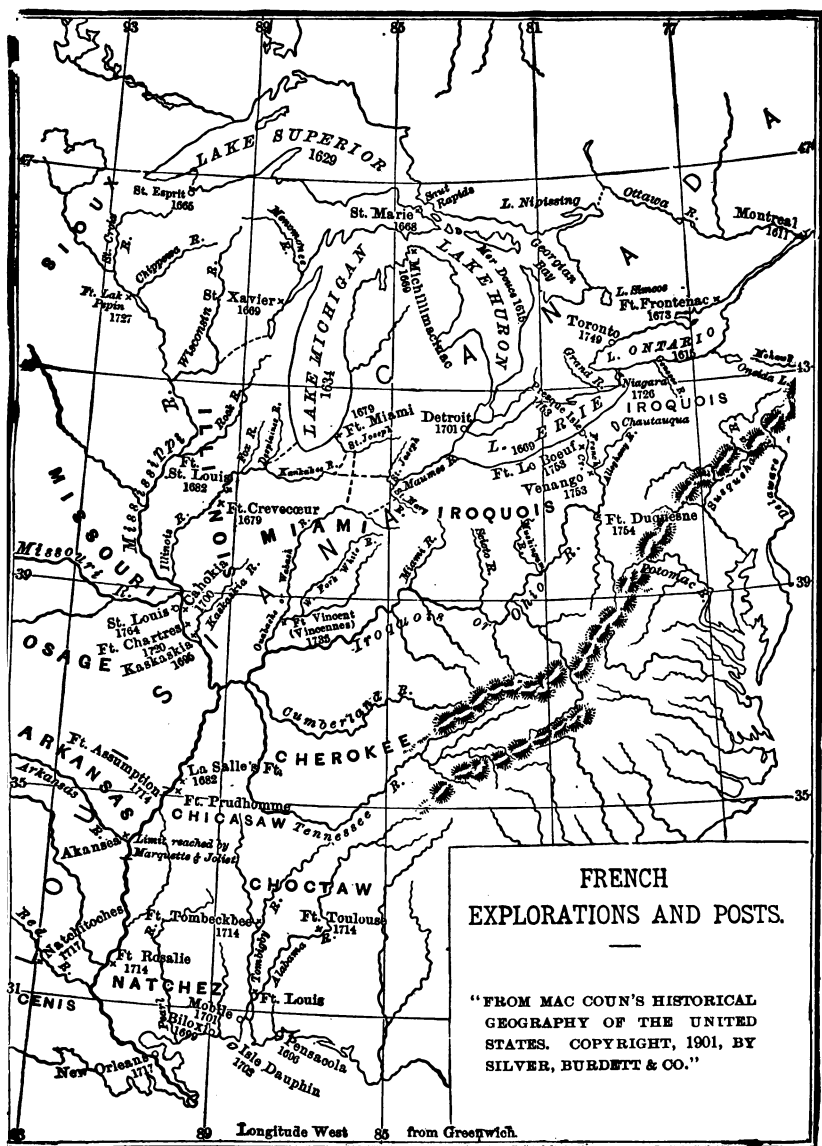
He was followed, in 1634, by Jean Nicollet, a trained woodsman, who after more than a year's absence returned, the discoverer of the strait of Mackinaw, Lake Michigan, Green Bay, and perhaps the Wisconsin river, on whose current as he was advised had he paddled three days longer he would have reached the sea, so near did he come to the discovery of the Mississippi, "The Great Water" that he believed was the sea.

**Champlain Lived Only to Hear** the story of this hardy adventurer. He died on Christmas day, 1635. With his death New France lost the grandest character of its history.

**Death** His memory is perpetuated not alone by the  
**of Cham-** great city that he founded, by molded bronze  
**plain** and carven stone, but by the memory that still lingers in the minds of men, as of a man of strong heart and ardent zeal, of just judgment and tender sympathy.

#### REVIEW.

Who found the fisheries of New Foundland and Labrador? Locate on a map their homes in the old world. Locate on a map Cape Breton island. When, and by whom, was this island first discovered, as far as is known? Who was James Cartier? To what honor is Cartier entitled? Why? Locate on a map Cartier's home in France. Give an account of Cartier's voyage. What ocean did he cross? What discoveries did he make? Describe his landing. When was the second voyage made by Cartier? Describe it. What did he expect to discover? From what does the St. Lawrence, gulf and river, gain the name? What and where was Stadaconé? How did Cartier gain the friendship of the Indians? Mention some later events which occurred in this vicinity. Where was Hochelaga? Describe its situation. Where did Cartier spend the winter? What attempt at colonization did Cartier make? Why did France neglect her new found possessions for so long after this? What finally directed her attention to the new world? Tell all you can of the life of Samuel de Champlain previous to 1603. Of what importance was the fur trade at this time? Who was De Monts? Tell of Champlain's explorations. Trace his course on a map. What colony did he establish? What Indian relations affected the colonists? What was the effect of using muskets against the Indians? Tell of Champlain's further services. Compare dates of establishment, chances of success, etc., of the Plymouth colony and Quebec. How did political conditions in France affect the colonists in New France? Read in your histories of the old world something more of Cardinal Richelieu. What was the object of the "Company of the Hundred Associates"? Who was probably the first European to reach Michigan? Give reasons for the answer. Who was Jean Nicollet? Tell of the death of Champlain.





## CHAPTER III.

### THE JESUIT PATHFINDERS.

**Richelieu Was Not Content** with the regulation of the trade and commerce of New France. No sooner was this end attained than his powerful hand was felt in the domain of liberty and conscience. Tolerance was to be supplanted by intolerance. To those who might have gladly sought the inclement wild as an asylum from persecution, **Religious** and have carved fields and built homes within **Intolerance** its wilderness, the door was closed by the decree which said "no Huguenot or other heretic" should be allowed upon its soil.

Thenceforth trade and the evangelization of the Indian tribes were to go hand in hand. It was to the

**Jesuit Fathers**, that the religious charge was delegated, and nowhere does history tell of a charge so given that was more zealously prosecuted or more valiantly defended.

Into the history of early Michigan is woven the story of the piety and zeal of these disciples of Loyola, who, with love and patience, labored to illumine the night of heathen darkness by the light of a Christian faith, amid such trials of pain and suffering as will ever form one of the most tragic chapters in all history.

As the Jesuits surveyed the near and distant fields which, from the mission at Quebec, seemed ready for the harvest, the field of greatest promise seemed to lie bordering the great fresh waters of the west. There beside the lakes and rivers whose waters reached the Georgian Bay, dwelt the

Huron nation, a populous community of fixed abode subsisting upon the products of a rude agriculture.

It was there that, years before, La Caron had planted the cross, and thither the Jesuits longed to take their way. Father Sagard had arrived at the "Mer Douce" by the Great River of the Ottawas, in 1632, but such were the obstacles interposed that it was 1634 before Jean de Brébeuf, Massé, and Charles Lalement reached the distant mission.

**Beside the Strand of Lake Huron**, whose water still beckoned them westward, they reared their bark chapel, whose vesper bell gave notice of their holy purpose. Here, nine hundred miles from the humble hut of their superior, they told the mysteries of their faith in the Huron tongue and performed the offices of priest and teacher, ten years

**Missions** and more before John Eliot, honored as "The  
**Among the** Apostle to the Indians," had preached a sermon  
**Huron** to their kindred whose lodges could be seen  
**Indians** from the streets of Boston.

To the Jesuits of New France the trials, hardships and the terrors of the Huron mission were an incentive rather than a hindrance. To be the instrument of the Holy Church in the salvation of the legions in darkness; to prosecute their labors with loving patience toward those who rendered back the atrocities of barbaric cruelty, was to win the favor of the Prince of Peace and the rewards of heaven.

Obstacles and suffering but kindled their undaunted enthusiasm, for self abasement was the service of the Master.

**Brébeuf and His Companions** were soon followed by others will to do battle for the faith. By 1642, there was scarce village of the Huron or allied nations where the black robes of the Jesuit Fathers had not become a familiar sight. During the mission's life, twenty-nine missionaries entered its field.

If the fur trade and the evangelization of Indian tribes were to absorb the energies of French colonization in the early days, there were still a few men who would render allegiance to neither priest nor trader. Such **Exploration** men were Étienne Brulé, Jean Nicollet, Jacques Hartel, Nicholas Marsolet, and perhaps others. Though zealous Catholics they were never long subject to the discipline and restraints of the Catholic faith.

**They Left the Settlements and Missions** to roam the forests with the Indian, to be partakers of his life and aspiration. Where their wild wanderings led them the past will never tell. Brulé had voyaged beyond where the waters of the Superior and Lake Michigan mingle with the Huron, and Nicollet had gone beyond to the Indians of the western shores. Of the wanderings of the others no record now remains. That they brought to the distant missions stories of the vast countries westward, is to be presumed.

Whether following the trail of some marauding voyageur or seeking to carry the seeds of the faith still westward, in September, 1641,

**Isaac Jogues and Charles Raymbault** left their mission station on one of the inlets of Georgian Bay and coasting northward along its shore entered St. Mary's river.

They pushed their frail canoe among its numerous islands whose forest covered sides and summits, resplendent in the blended tints of emerald and gold, were mirrored in the blue waters. Small wonder that these christian pioneers should have given voice to enraptured enthusiasm when **Discovery** first they viewed the wondrous natural beauty of which Diety has fashioned in the St. Mary. **St. Mary's** Today it is surpassed by no landscape of equal **River** extent throughout the whole northwest.

After a voyage of seventeen days they came into view of

the crowning exhibit which nature had perfected in the course of the upper waters; the majestic river, flowing between banks of perennial verdure, its liquid blue dashed to silver and flaked with foam in the falls and rapids of the Sault Ste. Marie.

Here they were made welcome to the native hospitality of 2,000 of the Chippewa nation who had gathered to catch the "deer of the water" as they called the white fish with which the river and its upper waters abounded. To the awe struck natives Father Jogues and his companion exhibited the symbols and propounded the mysteries of their faith.

**The Indians Were Anxious** that the missionaries should take up their abode with them, and told them of the *Gitché Gomee* (great water) and the country that lay beyond. Late in the autumn they retraced their way to their mission among the Hurons, intending to revisit the scene of their transient effort with the coming of another springtime.

Fate had otherwise decreed. Raymbault was already stricken with a mortal disease incurred by his exposure and privations. The following year he was accompanied to Quebec by Father Jogues, and there died in October, 1642.

After the death of his companion, Jogues, while ascending the St. Lawrence, was captured by a marauding band of the Mohawk tribe. His subsequent years of captivity, torture, and suffering far from the scenes of Michigan mark him as one of the valiant characters of the great order which he served.

**Eighteen Years Passed** before another European set his foot upon the soil of Michigan. The reason is to be found in the renewal of a conflict which, there is cause to believe, had been waged for centuries upon this continent.

The Huron nation living in a fixed abode had developed

some of the crude arts necessary for the support of life in a fixed locality. If they were thus superior to the surrounding tribes, they were likewise inferior as warriors. This distinction belonged preeminently to their relatives of the great Iroquois confederacy who ranged the hills and lake sides from the Hudson to the Niagara.

Thirty years had passed since Champlain brought consternation to a Mohawk band with the thunder of his "arquebuse." They had been years unmarked by general tribal warfare or retaliation.

From the Dutch upon the Hudson the Mohawk had himself learned skill in the use of the death dealing weapon of civilization. Now when the Jesuits began to see promise of reward for years of suffering and privation, the horrors of an Indian war broke with all its fiendish barbarity and cruelty. With sudden onset the Iroquois swept the Huron country as with a scourge of blood and fire. Pestilence filled their homes with dead, and famine brought them to the chasm of despair.

The Hurons Fought Bravely and at times administered disastrous defeat to their enemy, but all to no purpose. Year by year their ranks were depleted until at last, in 1650, the Huron mission was abandoned and the remnant of the nation divided, some seeking safety beneath the cannon of Quebec, while others sought an asylum on the islands of the great Lake Huron or became amalgamated with the tribes in the vicinity of the Sault Ste. Marie.

All now was peace on the grand river of the Ottawas. It was the peace of the desert waste. The dusky denizens of its border lands were gone; but it was still a highway to reach those who dwelt beyond at the head of the great lakes and beside their rugged shores.

When a semblance of peace had been restored the canoes of the trader and the missionary were again upon its waters, but they were bearing men of a different mould.

Following the loss of the Huron mission, if the missionary lost none of his religious fervor, he developed a greater love for secular knowledge, and for the next half century he was the explorer clad in cassock with crucifix and breviary by his side. Likewise the trader, as he sought for **Coueurs de bois** peltry and gain, was zealous to extend the limits and the glory of New France. In this project they were led by a few men of commanding figure and aided by an army of *coureurs de bois*, who, impatient of restraints, deserted the habits of civilized men and became the oracles in Indian bands, forming alliances with their women and living for months and years a life of savage indifference and ease. Two adventurous traders,

**Radisson and Grosseilliers**, were next to pass the straits of Mackinaw and reach the tribes that lay beyond. They made their journey in 1658, penetrating to the distant country of the Sioux in western Wisconsin and eastern Minnesota. They returned after an absence of two years with a cargo of furs of great value.

What is of value to us is the fact that Radisson left the **Discovery of Regions West of Michigan** first written description of the Sioux and the country they inhabited. These men were not far distant from Lake Superior and no doubt knew of its existence, but there is nothing to show they were first upon it.

This honor was reserved for a pious priest named René Mesnard. Resolved to reach a remnant of the Huron nation that had wandered northward and westward from the fury of their Iroquois tormentors, and to learn more of the geography of the vast country of which the Indians brought

such strange reports, he set forth from Quebec on the 28th of August, 1660, on his long and perilous journey.

He was an old man, but strong in his faith. When he left Quebec he took with him only the most meager necessities saying, "I trust in that Providence which feeds the little birds of the air, and clothes the wild flower of the desert."

**Father Mesnard Ascended the Ottawa** and Georgian Bay and reached the Indian village at the Sault Ste. Marie. Here he tarried for a few days that nature might restore his wasting energies. This accomplished he pursued his lonely way and passing from the Ste. Marie river his frail **Lake Superior** canoe shot out upon the broad expanse of the *Gitchi Gomee*. Coasting its southern shore, by October 15th he reached Keweenaw Bay, to which he gave the name of St. Theresa. Here among the converts of the far-away Huron mission, he established the first mission of the northwest.

That he spent the winter here seems certain, but his subsequent journeys are lost to history. Even the manner of his death is unknown. That he died in solitude and alone upon the dreary shore of the great lake he had discovered with no requiem save the moaning of the solemn pines, is the conclusion of his biographers.

**We Are Now About to Meet** with some great names in the history of New France whose careers became a part of the history of our own Michigan. Indeed, so illustrious are the names which appeared during the next fifty years that it is a period frequently referred to as "The Heroic Period" of New France.

**Louis XIV.** had succeeded to the throne of France, in 1642, when a lad of but five years. He was still a young man when the Peace of Beda brought a temporary relief

to his nation, in 1667, and gave him time and opportunity to devote his splendid talents to the glorification of his kingdom. His reign has, by reason of the brilliant men he drew about him, been aptly styled "The Golden Age of France."

Great soldiers, sailors, and statesmen gave him of their wisdom, while great artists and men eminent in literature **A New Era** and science were his contemporaries. Canada **in France** felt the influence of his ambitious court. To New France he sent some of his ablest men, among whom were Courcelles, the governor, and Talon, the intendant.

**New France** was no longer a mission and a fur trading station; it had become a colony. In 1663 it had a population of 2,500 scattered among its isolated parts, one-third of whom were at Quebec. At about the same time 2,000 immigrants and 1,200 veteran soldiers, having in their ranks the blood of the oldest houses of France and Italy, came to swell the population. In 1670 there were 6,000 inhabitants.

**A Feudal Land System** was established, and to the officers and more influential citizens the government gave large tracts of land about the settlements but especially along the Sorel river. These grants were known as seignories. The seignor in turn parceled his vast estate in smaller holdings to the private soldier and common people, who became known as habitants. The habitan was always liable to **Habitans** be called to the defense of the seignory and in addition rendered to his seignor, as over lord, a small annual rental and specified service.

An examination of a map of such portions of the country as were early settled by the French, shows the land subdivided into long narrow strips coming to the water's edge and extending a considerable distance inland. These were in many instances the holdings of the habitants. They had



a frontage of about forty-three rods and a depth of one and one-quarter miles.

**The People** had no voice in their government. Trade was in the hands of a hard monopoly, and it was a matter of no surprise that habitants and heirs of the seignories broke from the restraints so unnaturally imposed, to lead the free life of the voyageur and coureur de bois.

Although the greater part of the dispersed Huron nation dwelt beside the fortress of Quebec, still the Jesuit fathers did not forget the hunted fugitives who had fled to the bleak shores of the great northern water.

**Claude Allouez** went thither in 1666 to take up the work of the departed Mesnard. His escort, by lakes and rivers, was five hundred Indians, who had come from the northern country for the annual barter at Quebec. They reached the Sault Ste. Marie early in September. Father Allouez pushed out upon the waters of the *Gitché Gomee* to which he gave the name of Lac Tracy, or Superior, in honor of M. de Tracy, viceroy of New France, under whose authority his mission was undertaken.

**Allouez' Travels**      He proceeded to Chequamegon Bay and there amid a numerous Indian population, he built his mission, which he named La Pointe d'Esprit. His extensive travels north, south, and west impressed him with the magnitude of his work. He went to Quebec in the fall of 1667, with specimens of copper from the lake region and with stories of the great river "Messepi" that he had heard of from the Sioux. His appeal for help was answered and in the following spring, 1668,

**James Marquette and Claude Dablon** came to his assistance. The same year these two priests founded a permanent mission at Sault Ste. Marie, thus laying the foundation of the oldest settlement within our borders.

Father Marquette was soon transferred to the mission at La Pointe—Allouez going to other fields—where he served from September, 1669, until 1671. In the latter year his Huron band fled before the onslaught of the atrocious Sioux. Marquette fled with them to gather them about him at a new mission on Moran Bay named in honor of St. Ignatius,



although there is some authority for the claim that he made his first settlement on the island of Michilimackinac.

**The Authorities at Quebec** were fully appreciative of the extent and import of the discoveries thus far made and, with prudent thought for the morrow, they early sent an embassy to take possession of the country. It was Simon Francois Daumont, Sieur de Saint Lusson, who bore the commission of Courcelles, the governor general, and M. Talon, the intendent.

In October, 1670, with fifteen companions Daumont be-

gan his journey. Wintering with friendly Indians on the bay, they reached Sault Ste. Marie early in the month of May, 1671. By the 14th of June messengers had brought to the Sault a concourse of Indians representing fourteen tribes drawn from the region of the great northwest.

For the wilderness it was a vast and picturesque assemblage in which the black robes of the priests from the missions, the uniforms of delegates and soldiers lent variety to the barbaric finery which bedecked the throng of chiefs and warriors.

The ceremony partook of all the formality of medieval days. Upon a rise of ground the Frenchmen caused a large cross to be erected and a post to which was attached the arms of France. The *Vexilla* and *Exaudiat* were chanted by the Frenchmen to the infinite delight of the Indians.

**Prayers Were Offered** for the sacred person of Louis XIV. Daumont de Saint Lusson with sword and clod of earth in hand three times proclaimed possession of the country, "In the name of the most high, most powerful, and most redoubtable monarch, Louis XIV. of Name, most Christian King of France and Navarre." Three times the entire assemblage cried "Vive Le Roy." The treaty was then drawn up, signed by the French, and assented to by the Indian ambassadors by gifts and belts of wampum.

Thus by reason of the facilities of the lakes and rivers were the French enabled to reach the heart of the continent, rear the emblem of their sovereignty, and forge bonds of friendship with the Indian tribes twelve years before William Penn held his famous treaty with the Indians within sight of the tide waters of the Atlantic.

## REVIEW.

What was the mission of the Jesuit Fathers? Review the life of Cardinal Richelieu. Name the most prominent priests and traders of this period, and tell something of what was accomplished by their zeal and wanderings. Locate St. Mary's river. Give an account of its discovery. Of what importance is the Sault Ste. Marie now? How were the missionaries welcomed by the natives? Compare the Hurons with the Indians of the Iroquois confederacy. How was the work of the Jesuits retarded? What became of the Indians? In what respect were the men who came after this Indian warfare different from their predecessors? Who were the *coureur de bois*? Who first reached the Sioux country? What was their purpose? Give an account of the purpose and journey of René Mesnard. Who were Courcelles and Talon and why were they sent to New France? What were the seignories? Who were habitants? What was the condition of government and trade? What was the effect? Who named Lake Superior? What had it been called? Tell of the efforts of Father Allouez. Give an account of the early missionary work of Marquette. Describe the ceremony of formally taking possession of this territory previously explored. Compare this treaty with that subsequently made by William Penn.

## CHAPTER IV.

### ATTEMPTS AT COLONIZATION.

**Marquette Returned to His St. Ignace Mission**, the formalities of seizin having been accomplished. Little is known of his labors during his first year there. That he measured to the standard of his order and his faith is proven by his letter to Father Dablon. In this letter he recounts his trials and disappointments, and concludes with the state-  
**Missionary Spirit** ment that "These are the consolations which God sends us, which make us esteem our life more happy as it is more wretched."

In 1668 or 1669, Marquette and Allouez made a map of Lake Superior and the upper portions of Lake Huron and Michigan. It was published in 1672, the same year in which the iron willed

**Frontenac Had Proudly Stepped** upon the strand at Quebec as governor of New France. Official Quebec was rife with scenes of empire, and Frontenac had no sooner arrived than M. Talon, the intendant, laid before him the plan for the exploration of the Mississippi, or the great river to the west, of which so many rumors had reached the capital.

**Louis Joliet**, a man of learning and courage engaged in the fur trade, returning, in 1669, from the upper regions, had boldly held his course through Lake Huron, through the beautiful Detroit, coasted the northern shore  
**Discoveries** of Lake Erie, and demonstrated that the waters of the upper lakes mingled with the floods of the St. Lawrence.

It was natural that this man whose exploit was still fresh

in the mind of the intendant should be urged by him and commissioned by the governor to find and explore the western river. It was equally deserved that his companion and co-laborer should be the devout, map-making priest at St. Ignace.

It was early in December, 1672, that Joliet arrived at the northern mission and apprised Marquette of his selection.

**The Good Priest Was Enraptured**, as he tells us, not alone because it gave him the opportunity of consummating a long cherished design, but because it placed him in the happy necessity of exposing his life for the salvation of the nations which dwelt upon its shores.

The winter of 1672-3 was spent in making preparations and gathering information from the Indians. It was on the 17th of May, 1673, that the two explorers with **The Mississippi River** five French volunteers left the mission at Michilimackinac. Their voyage was by Lake Michigan, Green Bay, and down the Fox river, thence by Portage to the Wisconsin, down whose broad current they sailed until the 17th of June, upon which day, with joy inexpressible, they turned into the

**Mighty Father of Waters.** They followed its course as far as the Arkansas. Returning, they entered the Illinois and pursued its course until, by the shortest portage, they were enabled to reach Lake Michigan, along whose western shore they coasted to separate at Green Bay.

Joliet went to Quebec and broke the tidings of their great discovery, and Marquette to the mission of St. Francis Xavier to regain his wasting strength. Here he remained in feeble health until October, 1674, when with effort he set his face southward to carry the gospel to the Illinois. Here he spent a dreary winter filled with forebodings and battling with disease.

In the springtime he sought to return to his mission at Michilimackinac and at the same time devote his wasting energies to further explorations. He coasted the eastern shore of Lake Michigan to where a "river entered the lake with an island at its mouth." Here his strength failing, he requested his attendants to carry him ashore. A little way from the strand they constructed a rude altar and the good priest said the service of his church. This done, he requested that his companions should withdraw for a little time that he might spend it in prayer and meditation. After the lapse of half an hour, Pierre

Porteret returned to find that, in the interval, the sweet spirit of the father had winged its way to realms of peace.

Father Marquette died on the 18th day of May, 1675, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. The voyageurs scooped a shallow grave and there, beside the river that has since been given his name, they buried him with no other service than the doleful murmur of the waves upon the



STATUE OF MARQUETTE.

shore. Two years later, on the anniversary of his death, his

Indian friends disinterred the body and, with a convoy of thirty canoes, bore it to the mission at St. Ignace, where on the 9th of June, 1677, it was buried in the chapel floor with solemn and impressive service.

At St. Ignace a marble shaft now marks his grave, while upon the shore at the beautiful city at the north which bears his name, his form in sculptured bronze faces the mighty Lac Tracy, or Superior, whose shore he first charted and whose history will forever be invested with the charm of his gentle life.

**The Authorities of New France** were fast coming to an understanding of the geographical features of the southward country.

Champlain's explorations by way of the grand river of the Ottawas had given that direction to the efforts of his successors, and so it was that the first settlements of Michigan were upon its northern shores.

Even before, while Joliet and Marquette were coasting the northern lakes, traversing the winding rivers and tiresome portages that took them to the Mississippi, the fame of another explorer was rising in New France. **Robert Cavellier** Robert Cavellier had come to Quebec in 1666, in the twenty-third year of his age. He is better known to history as

**LaSalle**, from the name of his family estate near Rouen, France, the place of his birth.

To the energy, wisdom, and sagacity of this young man both colony and crown were destined to owe a greater debt than to any other man within the province since Champlain. The first three years following his arrival were in part spent upon his seignory at Montreal. In 1669 his imagination was fired by the mystery of the great country that lay



to the south of the great lake region. He had spent his time in acquiring several Indian languages.

**He Resolved to Make the Forests,** the lakes, and the rivers of the great section give up their secrets, and he resolved further to win them all for the glory of his king and country.

His exploits are woven into the early history of Michigan, although his greatest achievements were in distant regions of the Ohio and the Mississippi valleys. Here La Salle laid the foundation of an empire in extent and richness surpassing the empire of the Cæsars, and by his **Empire of La Salle** perseverance, patriotism, and undaunted courage made for himself a name that appears upon the most thrilling pages of American history.

Early in 1669, La Salle sold his estate to obtain means with which to prosecute his explorations. Joliet, returning from the upper lakes, by chance met him upon the Grand river between Lakes Erie and Ontario. With La Salle were two Sulpician priests, De Galinée, a student with knowledge of surveying and geography, and Francois Dollier, who before entering the priesthood had served with distinction as a soldier under the renowned Torenne.

They were seeking to carry the cross to the nations that should be found on the river which Indian rumor told them flowed southward, perhaps to the Gulf of California or of the Vermilion Sea, as it was then called.

As the little company discussed the

**Geographical Probabilities** of the country, Joliet contended that the route would be found through the northern lakes, while La Salle was equally insistent for the mysterious Ohio of which the Senecas had given him vague information.

The priests were converts to the arguments of Joliet and

resolved to trust their fortunes to the Erie and northern waters. La Salle, true to the characteristics of his later years, kept to his convictions and went alone.

The two Sulpicians wintered at Long Point and in the **The Detroit River** early springtime paddled their frail canoe westward on the bosom of Lake Erie. They ascended the Detroit and were the first to leave a record of its passage, although it is more than probable that Joliet had passed it the fall before.

**At the Present Site of Our Metropolis** the missionaries found a squalid Indian village called Teuscha Grondie. Their only labor here was the demolition of a crude Indian idol, whose broken fragments they cast into the river.

They reached the Michilimackinac and Lake Superior missions and returned to Montreal by the Ottawa route. They made no discoveries, although Galinée's map is the first of the great lake region. They coasted the eastern **Early Maps of New France** shore of Lake Huron and so gained no knowledge of the lower peninsula of Michigan. Their map ignores the separate existence of Lake Michigan, and combines the two lakes as one body of water under the name of "Michigone au Mer Douce des Hurons."

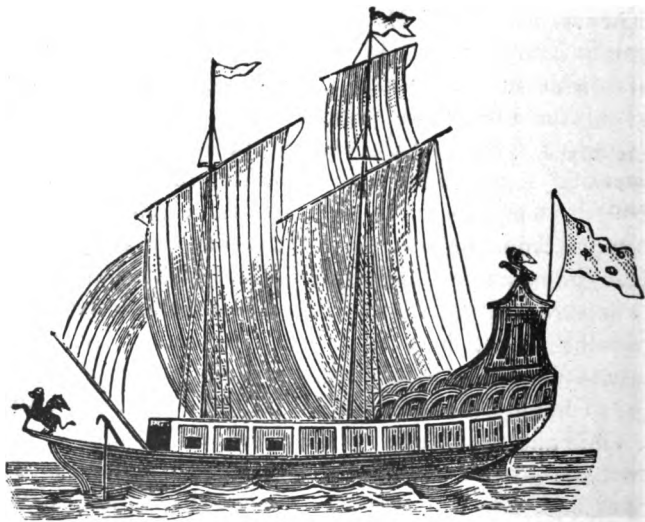
The next ten years in the life of La Salle were years in which he fought obstacles imposed by nature and by jealous and designing men. Beginning his journeyings in the hope of finding the long sought passage to China, he found the Ohio and the Illinois. He had the reasonable conjecture, if not the positive knowledge, that these rivers reached the Mississippi. He had seen the rich woodlands and undulating plains to which these streams were tributary and relinquished the hope of a passage to India.

**His Active Mind Grasped** the practical question of possessing, and by a line of fortifications and settlements, of

holding the country and commerce from the great lakes to the Gulf. He had the double purpose of seeking an easy entrance into the valley of the Mississippi through the lower extremity of Lake Michigan, and at the same time furnishing finances for his project.

**First Vessel on the Lakes** He began the construction of a vessel for the navigation of the great lakes.

In the early days of January, 1679, his company of artisans and laborers began carrying materials over the twelve mile portage around Niagara Falls to the mouth of the Cayuga Creek, where he had obtained the consent of the Senecas to construct his vessel above the cataract. Through



THE GRIFFIN.

a winter of incredible hardships they labored, oppressed by savages and pinched with hunger.

In the early spring his vessel was ready for launching.

On the auspicious day, to the booming of cannon, the intoning of the Te Deum by priest and company, the stays were knocked away, and the little vessel of forty-five tons glided into the current of the Niagara. She was given the name of

**The Griffin**, an image of that fabled monster having been carved upon her prow "In honor of the armorial bearings of Frontenac," then governor of New France.

The vessel was soon completed, but not until the 7th of August, 1678, was La Salle able to free himself from the machinations of the envious and the incredulous and pursue his purpose.

On this day, amid joyous and pompous acclaim, the Griffin cast off her moorings, spread her sails to the westward breeze, and became the first vessel to plow the waters of the mighty lakes, the pioneer in a commerce vast and diversified.

For three days they held their course to the westward, and on the fourth turned northward into the beautiful **Scenery of** Detroit. Master and crew were warmed with **Detroit and** enthusiasm at the sight of nature's prodigality **Vicinity** displayed upon either bank. Father Hennepin, who acted as father confessor, priest, and historian of the enterprise, rounded up his glowing recitals of praise by recording that "Those who will one day have the happiness to possess this fertile and pleasant strait will be very much obliged to those who have shown them the way."

**They Rounded the Island**, since given the name of Belle Isle, and entered the lake to which they gave the name of Sainte Claire, since corrupted to St. Clair. They braved the storms of Lake Huron and at last cast anchor in the sheltered bay at St. Ignace, Michilimackinac.

When the Griffin fired her cannon, Jesuit priests, hardy voyageurs, and gay coureurs de bois joined in a show of welcome which was as unreal in fact as it was profuse in

its demonstration, for the suspicions, intrigues, and jealousies that had actuated priests and merchants at Quebec and Montreal had penetrated to far-distant Michilimackinac.

Early in September La Salle set sail for the region of the Green Bay. Here he took on board a cargo of furs, and on **Fur** the 18th of September, dispatched the Griffin **Traders** for Niagara with orders to return to the head of Lake Michigan when she had discharged her cargo. Simultaneous with her departure, La Salle, with fourteen men in four canoes deeply laden with implements, merchandise, and arms, resumed his voyage toward the country of the Illinois. The night following their departure a violent storm swept the lake, which detained them for five days upon the inhospitable shore.

**A weary and tempestuous voyage** brought them to the extremity of Lake Michigan, around which they circled, ascending the eastern shore to the mouth of the St. Joseph river, called by La Salle the Miami. Here he expected to meet his trusted lieutenant, Henri de Tonty, who, with a company of twenty men, was coasting the western shore of Michigan from Michilimackinac to the place of rendezvous. Neither Tonty nor his company were there.

Winter was fast approaching and the men clamored to be led to winter quarters among the Indians of the Illinois. To quiet their dissensions he put them at work upon a small fort at the mouth of the river. After twenty days, when the fort was nearing completion, Tonty arrived with **Exploring** half his command. Food having failed, the **Lake** remainder of his command had been forced to **Michigan's** go into camp and hunt for food. Later, fortunately, they rejoined their companions. As **Shores** sufficient time had now elapsed for the return of the Griffin,

for days they scanned the distant surface of the lake for sight of her welcome sail.

At last, yielding to the necessities of the advancing season, La Salle dispatched two men to Michilimackinac with instructions for the ship to proceed to the new fort upon the St. Joseph while he and the company ascended its current until they reached the place of portage to the Kankakee.

**La Salle then Passed to Other Scenes** and fields of effort not connected with the history of Michigan.

The Griffin, for which they had watched with anxious gaze, was never heard of more. Legend has placed the cause of her destruction at many doors. La Salle believed **Fate of the Griffin** that he had found evidence that she had been plundered and despoiled by her pilot and crew. Whether such was her fate, or what is more probable, that she was swallowed up by the fury of the autumn sea, will forever remain one of the mysteries.

The early spring of 1680 found La Salle again at Fort **Trip Across** Miami of the St. Joseph, preparatory to his **Southern** journey across our state in quest of succor for **Michigan** his garrison upon the Illinois. On this memorable journey to far-away Montreal he followed the Huron

for a distance, then left it to travel eastward and cross the Detroit, and finally by forest paths, lakes, and rivers reached his destination. Three times later he touched at Michilimackinac as he passed and repassed from the St. Lawrence to the valley of the Mississippi, before the hand of the assassin closed his wonderful career.



LA SALLE.

**The Exploits of La Salle** are of interest to us, not alone

because they have connection with our immediate history, but because they were the first in a train of events that extended the limits of New France from the great lakes southward to the Gulf. These events indirectly brought about the contest between the French and English in later years when the one sought to maintain, and the other to gain control over, the extensive region.

The work of LaSalle was supplemented by the labors of many men of enterprise and daring.

**The Monopoly of the Fur Trade**, depriving as it did the colonists from participating in its benefits, drove hundreds of the young men of the settlements into the forests to carry on in a contraband way the trade which, but for the "Canada Company," they would have done in a legal way.

These men became the voyageurs and coureurs de bois, and so numerous did they become that it has been said that during the closing years of the seventeenth century "every family in Canada had a member in the bush." These bush **Bush** rangérs, always proud of French blood and **Rangers** language, soon became Indians in life and habits. They accompanied the Indians on the chase, they acquired his language, shared his hospitality, and became oracles in the councils of various nations.

As a class, they labored for the extension of the power and authority of New France; not that they were amenable to its rule, but because they were the connecting link between the rule and the Indian tribes.

Among their number were men of intellect and training who could command the allegiance of bands of five and six hundred in number who were at once both companions and followers. Of such men was Daniel Du Lhut, whose memory is preserved in the name of the city which stands at

**Duluth** the head of Lake Superior. His career in bold, picturesque, and romantic interest is unsurpassed by anything from the annals of the great lake country.

**A Half Century Before** the English of Virginia looked westward from the crest of the Allegheny mountains, Du Lhut had erected a fort upon the northern shore of Lake Superior, and from exploration knew the "thousand lakes" of northern Minnesota and the tributary streams.

He was commandant of the post at Michilimackinac in 1686, and there learned that the Dutch and English at Albany, guided by French deserters, were attempting to gain control of the trade from the rich beaver grounds of the southern peninsula.

The French knew that, with free access through the country of the Iroquois, the Dutch and English trader at the eastern extremity of Lake Erie was but a few days paddling from the coveted preserve. Accordingly, in the year last mentioned, the authorities at Quebec authorized Du Lhut to close the entrance to the upper lakes.

In obedience to such authority he at once repaired to the lower waters, and before the close of the year had erected and garrisoned Fort St. Joseph near the later site of Fort Gratiot. At about the same time a small fort, presumably **Founding of Detroit** little more than a block house, was erected at the present site of Detroit. Whether it was ever more than the temporary abode of wandering coureurs de bois is not known. In the meantime La Salle's Fort St. Joseph had been burned, and a new fort of the same name erected at the mission among the Miamis, thirty miles inland, near the present site of the city of Niles.



**Michilimackinac** was still the chief military and commercial center of the northwest. Baron La Hontan, who visited the place in 1688, tells us that it "is certainly a place of great importance." It was still reached by the Ottawa and its numerous portages, and during the war between France and England the Iroquois again took the war path, lying in ambush along the St. Lawrence and the route to the upper country.

It was from Michilimackinac that relief came in the person of Du Lhut and two hundred coureurs de **Michilimackinac** bois, who cleared the Ottawa of its lurking foes and conveyed to Montreal the three years' accumulation of peltry.

In 1696 from this remote region came many a bush ranger to swell the army of Frontenac, which in that year invaded the land of the Iroquois and dealt such devastation and destruction. This army broke the spirit of the great confederacy and brought quiet to New France as far as their forays were concerned. At this point in our history appears a new name, the name of a man whose achievements were to be of the greatest importance to the territorial limits of Michigan. That name is

**Antoine de la Mothe Cadillac.** He was born in 1660 at Gascony, France, of good parentage, and to an environment of culture and refinement, his father having been an advocate and a member of the parliament of Toulouse. The **Cadillac** son soon gave evidences of a brilliant mind and was given the advantages of an education, which for the time was denied to many of more favored station. He was a man of imperious temper, of cool courage, and quick resolve.

Coming to Canada as a lieutenant in one of the regiments

sent for the defense of the province, his abilities soon won him higher commissions, and in 1694 he became the commandant at Michilimackinac. Here he remained until 1698. During these years he studied the situation, and grasped more completely than any other Frenchman the possibilities of New France and the obstacles that stood in the way of their attainment.

In 1695, Cadillac spoke of his post as being one of the largest villages in all Canada. He stated that it possessed a fort "and sixty houses that form a street in a straight line, and a garrison of 200 soldiers, while the villages of the savages, in which there are six or seven thousand souls, are about a pistol shot distant from ours."

The post at Michilimackinac was far from being a settlement or colony. It was little more than a depot where stores were housed, and where the missionaries, according to La Hontan, "lavished away all their divinity and patience, to no purpose, in converting ignorant infidels." Cadillac comprehended that such conditions could never make for the glory of New France. He saw that if she raised a barrier against the English she must do it through self-reliant and self-supporting communities located at points of strategic importance, and not in the outlawry of her sons as voyageurs and coureurs de bois.

Such a community he longed to plant, and he turned his eyes southward toward the beautiful Detroit river as the site best suited for the exploiting of his ambitions. The time was propitious for action, and burning with enthusiasm for the long contemplated project, he repaired, in 1699, to France to lay his plans before Count Pontchartrain, the colonial minister at Versailles.

**Coloniza-  
tion versus  
Conquest  
and Indian  
Missions**

## REVIEW.

What explorations were planned in Quebec? Why? Who was Joliet? Who was his companion? Tell what you can of their explorations. What is a portage? Describe the purpose and last days of Father Marquette. In what ways was La Salle especially fitted for the exploration of the great northwest? Did the geographical features of the country affect La Salle's journey? If so, how? Tell of La Salle's work and explorations. What of the fortunes of the Griffin? Who was Father Hennepin? State some of the difficulties encountered by La Salle. Locate Fort Miami. Why are La Salle's explorations of importance? In what condition was the fur trade at this time? Describe the voyageurs and coureur de bois and their power. How did the French seek to prevent encroachments by the Dutch and English? Locate and state the importance of Michilimackinac. Who was Daniel Du Lhut? How and when was the power of the Iroquois confederacy broken? Sketch the life of Cadillac. What were his views regarding the future of New France?

## CHAPTER V.

### THE SETTLEMENT OF DETROIT.

**The Records Indicate** that Cadillac was given an attentive audience by Count Pontchartrain, and that his ardent nature kindled the enthusiasm of the calculating minister and secured his hearty co-operation for the projected settlement on the Detroit. The commission of his king authorized the establishment of the fort and confirmed his seigniorial **Real Com-** rights to a tract fifteen acres square at such **mencement** place as the fort might be located. He lost no **of Michigan** time in repairing to Quebec, where he arrived **History** March 8th, 1701.

He left Troie Rivières on the 5th of June for his destination, not as we would expect by Lakes Ontario and Erie, but by the Ottawa river and Georgian bay.

**The Flotilla was an Imposing Array** of twenty-five bark canoes, each with a capacity of four tons freight. They carried the commandant, Cadillac, and his thirteen-year-old son, a nephew, Surgeon Henri Belisle, Captain Alfonse de Tonty, Lieutenants Dugue and Chacornacle, Father De L'Halle, a Recollect, chaplain of the expedition, Father Vaillant, a Jesuit missionary, fifty soldiers, and fifty Canadian traders and artisans, with equipment necessary for the enterprise.

For fifty-five days they toiled through lakes and rivers and carried their freight over portages. At last, on the 24th of July, 1701,

**The Forest Crowned Shores of Le Detroit** burst upon

their enraptured vision. On the rising ground at the narrowest part of the river they drew their canoes to the verdant banks.

The company's first act was to kneel upon the sward while the priest offered a prayer of thanksgiving and invocation. If their first thoughts were of piety, their second were of industry, and before the days of early autumn a palisade frowned from what is now the vicinity of Jefferson avenue and Shelby street. It had been christened

**Fort Pontchartrain** in honor of the colonial minister who had made its erection possible. The early successes of the project must have surpassed the fondest expectation of its founder. Inside of eight months the Indians had gathered **Gathering from far and near, and upwards of 6,000 had of Indians** taken up their habitation within sight of the bastions of the fort. In trade and importance it ranked with Quebec and Montreal, where civilization had struggled for nearly a century. Here were laid the foundations of Detroit, and with it begins the history of Michigan as an integral region.

**History Discloses that Cadillac's Work** was consummated none too soon. The authorities at New York were already formulating covetous designs towards the western lake country. The same year that Cadillac went to France, 1699, Robert Livingston laid before Lord Bellamont the project of taking possession of Detroit. His plan was to build a fort and form a settlement with two hundred christians and an equal or greater number of Indians from the Five Nations.

**Plans of the English** That the French succeeded was due only to the greater activity of their leader. Although the colony was on the high road to prosperity, it was as yet a colony without wives and mothers. With the convoy

of the following spring, bringing merchandise and supplies by the way of the lower lakes, came Mesdames Cadillac and de Tonty and other women.

**The Indians Gave Evidence** of their joy at this proof that the French intended to make homes among them. It may be important to remember that Madame Cadillac was the first white woman to step upon our shore, and that in 1704 was born Therese Tonty, our first child of European parentage.

One purpose of Cadillac's project was to draw about him at Fort Pontchartrain the Indians of the great lake country. In this he was so successful that within four years, the mission of St. Ignace was abandoned and the chapel burned.

**The Missions at the Sault and at St. Joseph** were deserted, while Fort St. Joseph, the predecessor of Fort Gratiot, which Du Lhut had erected and which was abandoned two years later, was likewise burned. The colony, however, was doomed to feel the blighting influence of restricted liberties, and the despotic regulation of its trade and commerce.

Cadillac had been but a few months at Detroit when a powerful combination began intriguing to undo his efforts. He had incurred the displeasure of the Jesuits while commandant at Michilimackinac by selling brandy to the Indians, and in other ways showing himself out of harmony with their aims and aspirations. They looked with scant sympathy upon a project that was destined to depopulate the regions where they had labored for half a century. Having striven to bring the Indians to an understanding of the christian faith, they were not willing they should pass under the dominations of a man like Cadillac, who had never shown himself sub-

**Opposition of the Jesuits**

servient to their will. Although they may have acted from some humane motives, they joined forces with a more powerful body actuated by mercenary motives alone.

**The Canada Company** wished for no enterprise in New France that did not tend to the increase of its own dividends. To it an Indian was more profitable than a colonist. It reasoned that the way to limit the number of colonists was to take to itself the profits of the post.

While Cadillac rested in the anticipation of a community **Enemies to the Colony** of French speaking people who would make homes from the forests and build a society strong in its own self-reliance, his enemies plotted his undoing.

In the spring of 1702, he received word that the trade of his post had been given into the control of the Canada Company. This made him but a figurehead in the project his energy and sacrifice had created. The English, stung by the failure of their plans, instigated a series of Indian atrocities which taxed the diplomacy of Cadillac to control.

**Expensive Litigation** in which the Canada Company was the real, if not the nominal, party was carried on. For long spaces of time Cadillac was kept at Quebec while trials and appeals were taken. It was late in 1705 before his rights were vindicated, and he was privileged to return to labor for the re-habitation of his colony.

He seemed now on the threshold of achieving his second project, that of drawing about him a French population. To encourage immigration and create a stable settlement, one of his first acts in 1707 was the granting of lands to the inhabitants. These grants deserve mention as being the first real estate holdings within the limits of our state.

Before the expiration of 1710, sixty-eight grants had been made of lands within the village, and thirty-one farms

**Condition of the Colony** and thirteen garden plots had likewise been granted of lands up the river. Upon his return to the colony he brought substantial encouragement in the form of two canoe loads (eight tons) of French wheat and other seeds, horses and cattle, and the machinery for the manor mill. The colony was without taxes as we know them. The habitants held their lands by tenure which required them to conform to certain conditions and to perform certain services, which answered the same purpose.

Of courts and government, as we understand the terms, there were none, nor were there ever any during the French occupation of Michigan. The later years of Cadillac's control were years in which he exercised the powers of the **Cadillac's Authority** highest feudal lordship of France. As Cadillac himself once stated, his powers were to punish according to circumstances, by censures, by reprimands, by arrests, by imprisonment, or by deprivation of civil rights, and in case of distinct disobedience, to run his sword through any one who offended. The rule, though strictly military, seems seldom, if ever, to have been harshly administered.

**As Cadillac Approached the Close** of the first ten years of his colonial enterprise with a prosperous community about him, he doubtless entertained a high hope for the full fruition of his dreams. But they were dreams which he was never to realize in fulfillment. Before the close of the year 1710, orders came transferring him to the governorship of Louisiana.

The appointment was presumably a promotion, but it was brought about by those who could better serve their selfish ends by his removal. He left **Cadillac's Transfer to Louisiana** in the same year for his distant mission, des-



tined never to see again the colony for which he had sacrificed the best years of his life, but which the coming centuries would mould into the beautiful "City of the Straits," his most enduring monument.

Upon the departure of Cadillac, the *Sieur Dubuisson* was given temporary command, awaiting the arrival of the *Commandant De La Foret*, a former lieutenant of *La Salle*.

In 1712, while *Dubuisson* was still in command, a band of from 800 to 1,000 *Fox* warriors, instigated by English emissaries, made a descent upon the fort with its **Attack of Fox Indians** weakened garrison and *Huron* allies. The siege continued for more than forty days, and eventually resulted in the almost total extermination of the attacking force.

**Since the Removal** of its garrison, *Michilimackinac* had become the rendezvous of the *coureurs de bois* and a lower element. To check the excesses of this element and to counterbalance the trade influence of the English at *Hudson* bay, a garrison was returned to the post in 1714, although the fort was removed from its ancient site at *St. Ignace* to the south side of the strait, near the present site of *MacKinaw City*.

**Life at the Old Forts** Fort *St. Joseph* was likewise regarrisoned. The subsequent years of French control brought little change in its affairs. There are long stretches of time in which the contentment and prosperity of the people can only be presumed by their silence.

We get occasional glimpses of life at the forts of *Michigan*.

**Charlevoix Was at Detroit** and *Michilimackinac* in 1721. In 1730 the elder *Robert Navarre* came to *Detroit* as *Royal Notary* to discharge certain limited judicial and ministerial functions. His office was a common one among French speaking people, and is important only as being the first

instance of the exercise of civic jurisdiction within our borders.

In 1741, Marquis de Beauharnais met with the Indians **Settlements on Western Shore** at Michilimackinac and induced them to make settlements upon the western shore, Muskegon and L'Arbre Croche (Harbor Springs) being among the number. In 1751, the fortunes of the Sault Ste. Marie were revived in the settlement of the Chevalier de Repentigny, consisting of a stockade fort and four houses.

**Such Was Michigan** when the first century of French control was drawing to its close. One village of fixed abode, three or four military posts with feeble garrisons, with an interior untrodden, vast, and wild. A few men like La Salle and Cadillac had sought to point the way to permanent occupation, but their counsels were unheeded and the advantage of their labors unsupported.

The English had now found the passes through the "Endless Mountains," as they early styled the Alleghanies, and had caught glimpses of the rich valleys and rolling plains that lay beyond. At Forts Niagara, Le Bœuf, Venango, and **Conflict Between the French and English** Duquesne, they came in touch with the French, who sought to guard their treasures, and the contest for supremacy began. It was an "inevitable conflict;" a war to decide the sovereignty and mastery of the new world.

As early as 1752, the French and Indians from the settlements of Michigan made an excursion as far south as Piqua, Ohio, to kill or capture a few adventurous English traders, and to scatter with fire and carnage the Indian band that had declared in their favor.

**The French and Indian War** began in 1754 along the outposts of the Alleghanies. Two years later it drew into war's frightful vortex nearly every nation of Europe, and

for seven long years filled their lands with blood and lamentation.

When Contrecoeur sought aid for the defense of Fort Duquesne from Braddock's attack in 1755, succor came **Michigan in** from far away Michigan. Charles Langlade **the French** of Michilimackinac, at the head of a numer- **and Indian** ous body of Indians, traders, and coureurs **War** de bois, was there to help in the annihilation of Braddock and his army. Their plunder was brought to Detroit, and it is said that many of the early horses of Michigan were offspring of those brought back from the scenes of Braddock's ambushade.

In 1755, when the English enforced the cruel decree which tore the Acadians from their homes, many found refuge among their kinsfolk at Detroit. Thus the people of Michigan have more than a passing interest in Longfellow's beautiful story of Evangeline.

Many French from Detroit, Michilimackinac, and the settlements of Illinois were likewise present at the battle of Fort Niagara. The campaigns of the French and Indian war were, in greater part, contested far to the eastward and only occasional rumors penetrated to our shores.

**The Fate of Michigan** was decided upon the Plains of Abraham on the memorable 18th of September, 1760. On the 8th of September Montreal had surrendered to General Amherst, and with it all of the upper posts. It was not until the 28th of November following that the commandant at Detroit, M. de Bellestre, was apprised of the surrender, and then by Major Robert Rogers, at the head of his Eng- **Michigan** lish and American command. With instruc- **Passes from** tions from his superior at Montreal, Captain **French** Bellestre turned over Fort Pontchartrain. The **Control** red cross of St. George was flung to the breeze

where for sixty years the *fleur-de-lis* had been the emblem of authority. The following autumn English forces were sent to take possession of the posts at St. Mary's, Michilimackinac, and St. Joseph, and Michigan passed forever from under the control of the power of France.

#### REVIEW.

What grants were included in Cadillac's commission? Who were his companions on his voyage? Describe their journey. What was their destination? Tell of the growth of Fort Pontchartrain and of its importance as a trading post. Why was it so called? When did the history of Michigan as an integral region begin? What other settlements were designed by another nation? Why did the French succeed? Who was the first white woman to come to Michigan? Who was the first child of European parentage born in our state? How did the establishment of Fort Pontchartrain affect the other trading posts and missions? Where were they located? In what ways did Cadillac incur the dislike of the Jesuits? Give an account of the purpose of the Canada Company and of its trouble with Cadillac. When and where were the first real estate holdings in Michigan? What was Cadillac's plan for his colony and what things did he do for its welfare? How was it governed? Why were his dreams never realized? Who succeeded Cadillac at Fort Pontchartrain? Which abandoned forts were regarrisoned and why? What settlements and explorations were made between 1720 and 1751, and by whom? Explain why there had to be a contest for supremacy between the French and English. Describe the French and Indian War in Europe. What was it called there? How did Michigan aid in this struggle? Why should the people of Michigan have a lively interest in "Evangeline"? How may it be said that the fate of Michigan was decided upon the plains of Abraham? Describe the possession of Michigan by the English.

## CHAPTER VI.

### ENGLISH OCCUPATION.

**Although by Force of Arms Canada** had passed under British control and the soldiers of King George garrisoned the posts of her frontier, the treaty of Paris, by which the war was terminated, was not signed until February 10, 1763. In the meantime the country was under martial law, a system that has never brought prosperity to a country nor contentment to its people, even when its administration has been entrusted to men of humane temperament, influenced by wise counsel. These two elements were frequently lacking in the men who, during the following years, had charge in these distant regions.

On the 17th of November, 1760, as Major Rogers was skirting the shores of Lake Erie on his way to take possession of Detroit, he was met by an Indian deputation who requested him to halt his command until his purposes could be made known to their chief. The following day the chief with his attendants appeared. His first salutation to Rogers was an inquiry as to how he dared to enter his country without his permission.

**Indians Not Friendly to the English** By plausible speech Major Rogers quieted his savage fears and was allowed to proceed. The Indians furnished him an escort to Detroit and provisions for his men. This was the first meeting between the English and the great Pontiac, whose name is perpetuated in one of the thriving cities of our state.

**Pontiac Was the Head Chief** of the Ottawas and their confederacy of kindred tribes. He was a man of power

and influence among the most distant of the Algonquin nations. At this time Pontiac was about fifty years of age, having his home upon the island of La Pêche at the head of Lake St. Clair.

His years had been spent in amicable and friendly relations with the French, and Pontiac had given them proof of his fidelity on one occasion by restraining Indian designers upon the French at Detroit, and by fighting with them at Braddock's defeat. They had reciprocated his loyalty by many flatteries and substantial favors.

Pontiac was heir to all the grossness of his savage race. From the common savage bedaubed with soot and vermilion, he differed only in the strength and penetration of his mind. So great was this difference, however, that he was able to organize one of the most

**Extensive and Audacious Combinations of Indians** ever attempted upon the American continent. His great achievements in the conception, maturity, and execution of this plan distinguished him as one of the greatest of his race.

In December, Major Rogers retraced his steps eastward, leaving Captain Donald Campbell as the first **Major Rogers** commandant. This position he retained until **succeeded** superseded by Major Gladwin in 1763. In the **by Major** late summer of 1761, three hundred troops **Gladwin** were dispatched to garrison the posts at St. Mary's, Green Bay, St. Joseph, and Michilimackinac, and they were likewise energetic in restoring the forts at Le Boeuf, Venango, and Presque Isle and in establishing new ones at Sandusky, Miami (Fort Wayne) and Ouatanon. The latter was a post upon the Wabash a considerable distance above Vincennes. Following the English soldiers came

**Dutch and English Traders** from Albany. Some of them were men of low character and soon gave a name of reproach to their more worthy associates. The Frenchman, whether civilian or official, had ever extended to the Indian the courtesies due his equal. In large measure they had studied to conform to his standard and ideals. The Dutch and English, long debarred from the field, frequently overstepped the limits of fair trade and met the complaints of the Indians with scorn and contempt. This wounded their pride and aroused their never dormant passions of retaliation and revenge.

For long years the French, as a part of their policy, had **Bestowed Presents Liberally** upon their Indian allies, and in so doing had followed a custom already established between the various friendly tribes. Their years of contact with civilization had modified their modes of life and made them dependent in some degree upon the arts and implements of civilized life to minister to their comfort. Their wants were both created and sustained by the annual liberality of the French.

In the closing years of the war, when wisdom should have dictated to the English a policy of liberality and conciliation, the opposite policy prevailed.

**The Spirit of Retrenchment** greatly lessened where it did not wholly stop the annual largess. Such action aroused the spirit of resentment.

The Indian had come to look upon the white man's bounty not as charity, but as his due in the satisfaction of their trade and diplomatic relations. Again, the long delayed **Causes of Pontiac's War** peace between France and England kept alive in the Canadian French the hope that the mother country would yet repossess herself of the lands so recently surrendered. Many causes conspired

to create and keep alive a spirit of unrest among the Indian tribes.

These causes created the fuel, so to speak, which required but the spark of the master mind of a Pontiac to kindle into flames of border warfare.

Pontiac saw more than the petty ills that were fermenting discontent. His great mind saw the significance of

**English Advances and Successes.** He comprehended that for half a century the mutual jealousies of French and English had been to the interest of his people, for both had sought their trade and influence. He equally comprehended that, with the French power broken, the English would sweep westward through the valley of the Ohio and beside the northern lakes, no longer actuated by a selfish motive to conciliate the Indian or protect his interests, and that, in the end, the Indian would be driven from the land of his fathers.

For many months Pontiac revolved the great question in his mind. His perfected plan was not the result of a frenzied impulse. It was the result of a deliberate consideration of the highest impulses that his savage nature knew, in which revenge, patriotism, and ambition with equal powers controlled.

**The Hopes and Expressions of the French** gave encouragement to his cunning, and he at last resolved upon a war for the restoration of the power of France in the new world.

He perfected his plans in the early winter of 1762 and his ambassadors went forth to the nations of the northern lakes, upon the Ottawa, the Ohio, and the Mississippi bearing the tokens of war. In hunting camps and  
**Pontiac's Plans** populous villages with impassioned oratory, they delivered the message of Pontiac to auditors made willing by wrongs both real and fancied.



The plan was to fall upon the exposed forts simultaneously at a time in the coming May to be fixed by the changes of the moon, to exterminate their garrison and English traders, and then to turn their united forces against the English frontier now weakened and unprotected.

Late in April, the swift messengers of Pontiac had summoned the representatives of the tribes to a final council on the banks of the little river Ecorse near Detroit. Here their final messages were exchanged and the next day the forest had swallowed up the savage throng. They reappeared a few days later as though returning from the winter's hunt about the forts of the northwest.

**Into His Confederacy** he drew well nigh all of the Algonquin stock, together with the Wyandottes, the Senecas, and several tribes of the lower Mississippi. Of all the posts of the western country, Detroit was considered the most important and its capture and reduction was reserved by Pontiac for himself.

Major Gladwin with a garrison of 128 men was in command of the fort and was seemingly unconscious of the murderous designs of his Indian neighbors. From some source he received intelligence in time to prepare for the threatened onset. The source of this information is not definitely known.

**Pontiac Designed** to gain entrance to the fort for the purpose of holding a council. The band of warriors that were to accompany him were at a given signal to fall upon the unsuspecting garrison and win an easy victory.

To be prepared for this emergency the Indians had shortened their rifle barrels by filing off the ends, so that they could be concealed beneath the blankets which they wore. It has been said that Major Gladwin received information that the Indians were borrowing files and were shortening

**Plans of the Indians Exposed** their rifles, and was thereby placed upon his guard. There is another charming story, old, but lacking in definite authority, that an Ojibwa maid carried the details of Pontiac's plan to Gladwin, for whom she had formed a friendly attachment. Whatever may have been the source of information, it was duly heeded, and when, on the morning of May 7th, Pontiac and his swarthy confederates entered the fort to take part in the proposed council, they were surprised and startled to find not only the garrison, but citizens and traders, under arms.

**It is Supposed** that Pontiac's distrust was not removed by Gladwin's explanation that the men were under arms for discipline and exercise. His stoical bearing did not desert him, and without betraying his chagrin he made his speech of friendly protestations, but withheld the signal which was to have precipitated the attack. Major Gladwin replied in a speech likewise devoid of expressed suspicions. A few presents were distributed and the Indians withdrew to their encampment.

On the day following Pontiac, with three of his chiefs, again visited the fort and sought through the proffered pipe of peace to lure the English into a sense of security. As a further pretense the Indians spent the afternoon in a boisterous and hard contested game of ball upon the adjacent field.

**The Celebration of the Victors** lasted until late at night. On the following day, Sunday, the 9th day of May, the vicinity of the fort was again thronged with an Indian concourse, seemingly animated by no purpose or design. Pontiac advanced to the gate of the palisade and finding it closed, demanded admittance for himself and braves that he and his chiefs might smoke the pipe of peace with his English brothers, and that his warriors might smell its fragrance.

**Major Gladwin Answered** that he might enter but that the crowd must be content to remain outside. Pontiac then knew that the commandant had penetrated his designs and that nothing more was to be accomplished through pretense and treachery. He returned to his warriors and in baffled rage told them the futility of his plans.

In a moment with the cry of wild beasts they sought the homes of the few English that dwelt outside the fort, tomahawked the inmates and bore away their scalps.

**In This Savagery** Pontiac took no part, but paddled his canoe to his village on the opposite shore. By the morning of May 10th his village had been removed to the Detroit shore, and he began one of the most remarkable sieges known to Indian warfare. Through weary weeks the flash of the rifles gave no respite to the garrison, who in relays slept upon their arms. The palisade would have gone down in a moment before the assault of civilized foe; but open assault was not a part of Indian warfare, and besides, two small vessels lay at anchor in the river and with cannon made the easterly and westerly approaches to the fort places of hazardous exposure. Early in the siege, at the request of Pontiac,

**Lieutenant McDougall and Major Campbell** went to him as envoys to negotiate a peace. Both were treacherously detained. McDougall made good his escape. Campbell was too old to follow and remained to meet a terrible death at the hands of his captors.

Some authorities say that Pontiac was privy to the outrage, but others equally credible declare him to have been without blame and say that Wasson, a chief of the Ojibwas, who was the perpetrator of the foul act, fled to Saginaw to escape the fury of the great chief upon his discovery of the barbarous deed.

**Gloom Settled** heavily upon the feeble garrison as they

learned the sad fate of the garrisons of the neighboring posts, all of which had fallen into the hands of savage captors. From Fort Niagara the English attempted to send a relief force to Detroit, but at the mouth of the **Fate of the Other Garrison** river the expedition was surprised by a band of Wyandottes, and a large part led captive to the village above the fort, where day by day their sufferings were the delight of their tormentors.

When no longer responsive to fiendish cruelty, a blow of the tomahawk or war club brought welcome death, and their naked bodies were flung into the river to float past in view of their imprisoned countrymen, who lived in almost daily anticipation of a similar fate.

**The Second Relief Expedition** succeeded to a better fate, and on July 29th, Captain Dalzell, with a force of 280 men with arms, ammunition, and supplies, under cover of a heavy fog, made the Detroit palisade and brought joy to the long beleaguered garrison. Captain Dalzell evidently desired to signalize his arrival by some exploit of dashing character. He conceived the idea of making a night attack upon Pontiac's camp, hoping to win an easy victory.

**Gladwin Opposed His Plan**, and only gave a reluctant consent when Dalzell pressed his scheme. At about two o'clock on the morning of July 31st, Dalzell, with 250 men, marched quietly out of the fortress gate, their intended destination being Pontiac's village some nine miles distant.

Unfortunately two Canadians had overheard the plans the **Battle of Bloody Run** day before. When the silent, moving column was crossing the bridge over Parent creek where it entered the Detroit river, through a deep defile from the front and side came the deafening yell of 300 savages, accompanied by the flash of their rifles.

**Into the Inky Darkness**, over an unknown road, the

brave men charged, to recoil before the volleys of the unseen foe. By eight o'clock, battle stained and weary, they gained the kindly shelter of the palisade, having left forty-nine of their comrades, of whom the brave Dalzell was one, among the dead, while the loss to the Indians was slight. The battle and locality was thereafter known as "Bloody Bridge" or "Bloody Run."

The site is now marked by a beautifully designed and inscribed tablet in bronze, erected by the present owners of the premises, The Michigan Stove Company.

**This Success of the Indians** was the cause of renewed enthusiasm, and the runners bearing the news to distant regions brought fresh levies of dark-skinned warriors. For a time the siege was prosecuted with a renewed vigor, but there were now 300 soldiers and ample supplies within the fort, and they could look forward with confidence to maintaining their position.

While Detroit had held out against every contrivance of savage ingenuity, less fortunate was the fate of the garrisons at other points.

**At Fort St. Joseph**, Ensign Schlosser was in command of a force of fourteen men when, on the 25th of May, a large party of Pottawattamies arrived from Detroit, professing to come on a visit to their relatives at St. Joseph. The chief with a few followers came to the fort to hold a friendly "talk" with the unsuspecting ensign.

Although his apprehension was soon aroused, before he could make any effectual provisions for the safety of his **Massacre at Fort St Joseph** command, eleven had fallen victims of the tomahawk and scalping knife, and Schlosser and three privates were prisoners bound with tight drawn thongs.

Fate was kinder to them than to their comrades, for on the 15th of June, they were exchanged at Detroit for some

members of the Pottawattamies who, for some time, had been prisoners within the fort.

**At Michilimackinac** the sequel culminated in an appalling tragedy, but with dramatic incidents of unusual interest. Captain George Etherington was in command of the post with a garrison of thirty men.

On June 4th, the Indians made preparation for a great game of baggattaway or Indian ball. It was a game for a large wager, and for several hours was fast and furious as the players sought to pass the ball beyond opposing goals.

**Many of the Squaws** had passed within the fort, where they seemed to be but gratifying their childlike curiosity. Outside, as the game progressed, seemingly as by a random throw, the ball struck near the open gateway of the fort, before which stood the commandant and lieutenant.

**Strategy  
and Mas-  
sacre at  
Michili-  
mackinac**

A number of Indians made a rush for the ball and gained the rear of the commandant and his companion, whom they seized, while the greater portion rushed within the fort and were handed tomahawks from under the blankets of the waiting squaws.

In a few minutes half the garrison had been massacred, and later a large number of the prisoners suffered a similar fate. The dramatic recital of the trader, Alexander Henry, who escaped the massacre, but witnessed its horrors from concealment, forms one of the most interesting chapters in the history of old Michilimackinac.

With the approaching autumn the necessity for provisions compelled the Indians to raise the siege about Detroit and to go upon the annual hunt.

**Pontiac Had Sought Assistance** from the French. In this he failed and no doubt foresaw the failure of his plans,

but it in no manner daunted his purpose. He resumed hostilities about Detroit the following spring, and while it was with less activity, it was in a manner quite as effective. The end was approaching. Messengers had reached many of the distant tribes, and the prospect of presents and rewards lured many of their chiefs to a great council at Niagara, where, through the diplomacy of Sir William Johnson, they made treaties with the English. The treaties may have been forwarded not a little by the fact that General Bradstreet was then on his way to Detroit with 3,000 men, where he arrived the latter part of August and relieved the long beleaguered garrison.

Pontiac had withdrawn to the banks of the Maumee and resisted all pacific advances, but many of his followers were so impoverished by the long struggle that they gladly entered into treaties with General Bradstreet.

By these treaties it is claimed that without their knowledge, they acknowledged the sovereignty of the King of England, and granted all the lands adjacent to the river from Detroit to Lake St. Clair. Troops were dispatched to Michilimackinac, which had remained ungarrisoned since the massacre of the previous year, and tranquility was again established.

**Pontiac Never Again** took up his old residence near Detroit. For a time he sought to incite the western tribes to strike once again for their independence, but his efforts were without avail. On the 27th of August, 1765, he met General Croghan, the representative of Sir William Johnson, at Detroit and smoked the pipe of peace. He requested that the pipe be delivered to Sir William "that he may know I have made my peace and taken the King of England for my father."

The next July he met Sir William in person at Oswego and made renewal of his peaceful profession. **Death of Pontiac** No doubt with a sad heart, and mindful of his fruitless struggle, when he said, "He who made the universe would have it so." A year later he was assassinated at Cahokia, Ill., by a Kaskaskian Indian. This crime was instigated by an English trader by the gift of a barrel of rum.

**Pontiac's War** was the most powerful and far reaching combination of Indians ever effected for the independence and preservation of their race. As many as 2,000 whites are said to have fallen victims to savage fury upon the unprotected frontier. Historians have given the uprising the name it will probably always retain, that of Pontiac's Conspiracy. While memory of the terrible time of Pontiac remained, its originator, Pontiac, was pictured as a veritable devil,—a treacherous fiend. If we view his life from the standpoint of barbaric ethics, and apply to his methods the standards of savage warfare, he towers a majestic figure, as worthy of generous commendation as those who have written their names high in the annals of war.

#### REVIEW.

What is meant by the term "martial law"? When was the treaty of Paris signed? Read in other histories how it affected the rest of the United States. Who was Major Rogers? Describe his first meeting with Pontiac. What were the apparent relations between the Indians and whites? What forts were regarrisoned and established? Locate on the map. Compare the English and Dutch traders and their methods with the French and theirs. How did Pontiac view these new influences? What was the result? Give an account of Pontiac's conspiracy. What part did he reserve for himself? Describe his efforts and the results. Who were McDougall and Campbell? What relief was planned for the Detroit garrison? Tell of the outcome. How did a second effort to relieve succeed? How did Capt. Dalzell purpose to end the siege? Tell of his expedition and its result. How did the other forts fare? (a) Fort St. Joseph? (b) Michilimackinac? What treaties finally ended hostilities? Who was General Bradstreet? In what ways is it said that the white men gained an advantage by the treaties? What posts were regarrisoned? Give an account of Pontiac's subsequent life. Give a character sketch of this warrior.



## CHAPTER VII.

### THE TERRITORY LINGERS IN BRITISH CONTROL.

**The King of Great Britain**, at the close of the French and Indian war, under the treaty of Paris, in 1763, established four separate governments known as Quebec, East Florida, West Florida and Granada.

Quebec was the only one connected with our history, and it was many years before even that connection could be said to be intimate. Into the provinces thus created was introduced the civil and criminal law of England, but neither Michigan nor any part of the territory north of the River Ohio came within the provisions of the governments thus created.

**Detroit Was an Important Place** which had more than 1,000 inhabitants, exclusive of Indians, in its immediate vicinity. Eleven years passed before the territory of Michigan, under the Quebec Act, came within the pale of civil government, and then in little more than name.

In the meantime the people of

**Michigan Knew No Government** other than that of military absolutism. The commandants were the source of authority, which they exercised either in person or through some subordinate. Under some such arrangement one Gabriel La Grand, in 1765, seems to have exercised a part of the functions of a justice of the peace.

Later, and in 1767, the commandant, Captain George Turnbull, commissioned Phillip Dejean a justice of the peace, with powers to make inquiry but not to render judgment except upon the joint request of the parties.

In the same year he received a further commission as **Early Courts** "Second Judge," "to hold a temporary court of justice twice each month at Detroit to decide of all actions of debt, bonds, bills, contracts, and trespasses above the value of five pounds of New York currency." The first judge was presumably the commandant himself, who continued to administer judicial proceedings as was customary with the deputy intendant of the French regime.

**The English Authorities**, like some of their French predecessors, saw but one purpose to be achieved in the lake country, and that was the nurturing of the fur trade. To this end the proclamation of the king forbade the surveying, granting, or patenting of any lands within our territorial limits, or the acquiring of title through Indian grants.

The ten years following 1764 were years of little event in our history. Not a few Scotch and Irish traders found their way to Detroit and Michilimackinac, and the fur trade grew to huge proportions. While the New England colonists were growing impatient under the restraints and aggression of the mother country, the French of Canada and the great northwest were quietly submitting to governmental wrongs of far greater magnitude. The reason was largely racial.

**In the Blood of New England** coursed the spirit of Magna Charta and the Bill of Rights. The people were imbued with the ideas of politics and independence, characteristic of their race. The development of the French Canadian had been along other lines. He was not lacking in the courage and patriotism displayed by his English neighbors. He entertained different ideals than they as to the essentials of his peace and happiness.

When the storm of the American revolution came,

although but fifteen years after the fall of Quebec, it found the Canadian either passive, or active for the English King. Some of this may have been brought about by the passage by the British Parliament of the Quebec Act of 1774.

**Loyalty of  
French  
Canadians  
to English  
Authority**

This much discussed act was evidently designed to keep the disaffection of the colonies from spreading to the Canadian settlement, for to the French-Canadian it granted many rights that were stubbornly denied to colonial Englishmen. One of the provisions of this act was to bring Michigan territory under the pale of civil government, as a part of the province of Quebec.

On November 9th, 1775, Henry Hamilton arrived at Detroit as Lieutenant Governor to be the first civil officer of the English period. Detroit and Michilimackinac were now upon the frontier of civil government, but so far removed from the seat of judicial authority at Montreal that there was little or no actual operation of government.

**Lieutenant Governor Hamilton** was clothed with, or at least assumed, well nigh unlimited administrative and judicial powers. Under his sway Dejean continued to exercise his powers as a justice of the peace. In 1776, they brought the authorities at Quebec to a realizing sense of conditions at the distant posts by proceeding to try, by a jury of six English and six French, a man and woman on the joint charge of arson and larceny.

**Detroit  
Under  
English  
Governor**

The jury found that they were guilty of the larceny, but of the proofs showing arson they had some doubts. The verdict was, however, considered warrant for the execution of the man, the woman being given her liberty for acting as his executioner.

For this unwarranted act they were presented by the

grand jury, and warrants for the arrest of both lieutenant governor and justice were issued from Quebec. Both escaped, no doubt because the public attention was engrossed with the events of the revolution. It had the effect, nevertheless, of making both more circumspect in the discharge of their judicial functions.

**The Lack of Courts** was very much felt at Detroit, and in 1777, under permission of the lieutenant governor, the merchants of the place established a court of trustees or arbitration. Eighteen of them entered into a bond that three of them should be a weekly court in rotation, and **Establishment of Courts** were to defend any appeal that might be taken from their decisions, the appellate court being presumably the lieutenant governor.

This volunteer court rendered judgments, issued executions, and imprisoned in the guard house. The work of the court seems to have been quite satisfactory to the people, and later a similar court was instituted at Michilimackinac.

**The War of the Revolution** was now taxing the energies of the New England colonies. While the scenes of its battles were far removed from our territory, Detroit became the seat of many important operations on the western border. As both sides sought to use the Indians in the revolution, the colonists were not entirely free from the blame they later put upon the English. From the very nature of things, the English were the only ones who could gain an advantage from the employment of Indian warriors.

**Alliance of English and Indians Against the Colonists** Among the first of the English to propose the acceptance of their savage service was Hamilton. In 1776, he communicated to the British authorities his views upon the advisability of such a scheme. In May, 1777, he

received a letter from Lord George Germain, which authorized the despatching of Indian bands to "make a diversion and excite an alarm upon the frontiers of Virginia and Pennsylvania."

**Hamilton Quickly Obeyed** his instructions. Before the close of the year he had sent fifteen parties of savages, in many instances led by whites, to spread death and destruction among the border settlements of Kentucky, Virginia, and Pennsylvania.

Many atrocities have been laid at the door of Governor Hamilton. He was an intense partisan, ever anxious to carry out the designs of his superiors. That he incited the Indians to the horrible barbarities they practiced is borne out by none of his letters or despatches to Quebec and Montreal, although he knew they could not be restrained either by his express desires or commands.

Whatever may have been his designs, the border settlements, in 1777 and 1778, suffered all the terrors of fiendish warfare. The terrible nature of these cruelties was known to Hamilton, for in March, 1778, he wrote to General Carlton, "the parties sent out from hence have been in general **Indian** successful, though the Indians have lost men **Cruelties** enough to sharpen their resentment. They have brought in seventy-three prisoners alive, twenty of whom they presented to me, and 129 scalps."

**He Could Have Added** with equal truth that many of the ghastly trophies had been torn from the heads of defenseless women and children. In the isolated and far distant forest homes there was no longer happiness nor safety. The pioneer knew not what day he might be compelled to fight for life, or what night he might be compelled to witness the slaughter of his innocents by the light of his burning cabin.

**The Settlers Retaliated** in ways that showed their spirit and resentment, but their efforts were of little avail against lurking bands that stealthily approached, struck their cruel blows, and beat a hasty retreat. Many pioneers of Kentucky and the border, like Daniel Boone, had been carried prisoners to Detroit. They knew that there could be little respite so long as the English felt themselves secure in the north-west.

The bold pioneer spirits of Kentucky formulated a plan to send an expedition into the country of the enemy. This expedition was, in its conception and execution, one of the most important in our own history, for it gave the north-west to the colonies. The glory of the achievement belongs to

**George Rogers Clark** and the few brave men who aided him in its execution. Clark was a Kentucky pioneer, a native of Virginia, and like Washington, a surveyor. He brought the Assembly of Virginia to a realizing sense of the terrible condition of the frontiersmen, and after some reluctance they voted him a considerable supply of gunpowder for the use of his people.

With remarkable foresight and wisdom, he sent spies, in 1777, to reconnoitre in the country of the Illinois and make a report. He submitted to Patrick Henry, then Governor of Virginia, a plan for the capture of Forts Kaskaskia and Vincennes. The plan was soon approved and early in January, 1778, with a commission as lieutenant colonel, at the head of 180 men, he began his march from Williamsburg to the far distant country of the Illinois and the Wabash.

**Clark's  
Expedition  
Into the  
Illinois  
Country**

It was a march filled with trials, hardships, and thrilling

adventure. On the evening of the 4th of July they surrounded the town of Kaskaskia, broke into the fort, and captured the garrison, almost before the astonished commander knew of their presence.

**The French Inhabitants**, as soon as they were made acquainted with his purposes, gave him their loyal support. Among those taken at Kaskaskia was M. Gibault, the worthy priest of Vincennes. He was a man of strong sympathies for the American cause and tendered to Colonel Clark both his allegiance and services.

**Influence of Father Gibault** News that France had recognized the American cause and had entered into treaty relations with the colonists soon became known at Kaskaskia, and lent enthusiasm to the cause.

Father Gibault soon tendered his services in ascertaining the sentiments of the inhabitants of Vincennes, which were gladly accepted. His visit to that place was fortunately timed, for he arrived there while the English lieutenant governor, Edward Abbott, was absent in Detroit.

**The Good Priest Gathered** his parishioners into the church and explained the events that had transpired. The whole population took the oath of allegiance to the commonwealth of Virginia. When Father Gibault left Vincennes late in July, he had the satisfaction of seeing the stars and stripes waving above Fort Sackville, as the fort at Vincennes had been christened.

Colonel Clark was as much astonished as pleased at the intelligence which Father Gibault brought him. He at once sent Captain Helm as commandant to the newly acquired post, intending to supply him with a suitable garrison as soon as possible.

The news that the Virginians, instead of being driven beyond the mountains, had taken the aggressive, and had actually crossed the intervening wilderness and captured the posts at Kaskaskia and Vincennes, brought little short of consternation to the authorities at Detroit. If the Virginians could appear unannounced at the posts on the Wabash and the Illinois, what was to keep them from Detroit?

**Major Lernoult Was in Command** at Detroit, and upon the receipt of the startling intelligence began the erection of a new and more substantial fortress. Its lines were laid a short distance north of the old palisade. It was christened Fort Lernoult and later known as Fort Shelby. From November until February the forces at Detroit labored with exceptional energy in the construction of the new stronghold.

Hamilton was probably chagrined at the loss of Vincennes, but a desire to escape the possibilities that might follow his recent presentment by the grand jury was, no doubt, equally influential in his subsequent activity. On the 7th of October, 1778, at the head of a force of about 150 volunteers and Indians with provisions and equipment, he set forth to retake the post of old Vincennes, where he arrived on the 17th of the following December.

**Captain Helm**, who with one American occupied the wretched fort, knew nothing of Hamilton's approach until he was but three miles distant. They wheeled a decrepit cannon to the gateway. When a short time later Hamilton stood at the portal and in pompous language demanded a surrender, Helm stood at his cannon breech with lighted taper and refused until the terms were made known to him. Hamilton, not knowing the size of his force, and wishing to avoid bloodshed, offered him the honors of war, which

**Effect of  
Clark's  
Success  
Upon  
the English**

**New Fort  
at Detroit**

**English  
Capture  
Fort  
Vincennes**



after deliberation were accepted, and the valorous captain marched out his one man, as much to the surprise, as to the chagrin, of his captor.

Hamilton at once proceeded to place the old fort in repair, and to visit his displeasure upon the inhabitants who had had the temerity to espouse the American cause.

**The Happenings at Vincennes** were unknown to Colonel Clark, who, at Kaskaskia, had received no tidings from Captain Helm since the return of Father Gibault the preceding August. In the meantime he had made a warm friend in the person of Colonel Frances Vigo, a Spanish trader at St. Louis, who had seen service in the army of his native land. Upon being acquainted with the desire of Colonel Clark to know the condition of the post at Vincennes, Colonel Vigo volunteered to make the journey and gain the information.

After capture by the Indians and many other hardships, he found the post and learned its total strength and condition, and on the 29th of January, 1779, delivered his message to Colonel Clark, whose plans for the recapture of the post were soon formed and under way to execution. On the 5th of February the gallant leader at the head of 176 men was on his way to further conquests.

**The Sixteen Days' March of Colonel Clark** and his brave men to Fort Vincennes through swamps and miles of drowned lands, where for hours they struggled on in ice-chilled waters, forms one of the most heroic exploits in the history of our nation. For days they were without food, and many times would have turned back but for the encouragement and entreaty of their valiant leader.

At last on the 23d he marched into Vincennes. The day before he sent notice to the inhabitants to remain in their houses, and said that, if there were any friendly to the king, they should "repair to the Fort, and join the Hair-Buyer

General," as he termed Hamilton, "and fight like men."

**Fort Vincennes Again Taken by Col. Clark** The attack upon the fort was sharp and decisive, and after a half dozen or more within were wounded, Hamilton surrendered. On the 5th of March Dejean, who was on his way from Detroit, to escape the same indictment that had hastened Hamilton's departure, and to carry despatches to his master, was captured a few miles from Vincennes.

The two with one Lamothe, a captain of volunteers, were sent prisoners to Williamsburg, Virginia. The imprisonment of the three was exceedingly rigorous and retaliatory, for the atrocities and savage barbarities that had been visited upon the settlers had been sanctioned by Hamilton and his companions.

The fate of Hamilton and Dejean brought joy to the inhabitants of Detroit and excitement to the supporters of the king. In Colonel Clark's letter to Major Lernoult he sarcastically expressed his satisfaction at the work of the English upon the new fort, adding "it will save the Americans some expense in building."

**Colonel Clark Desired** to attempt the capture of Detroit, but was obliged to forego the expenditure, as he states, "for the lack of a few men." He held the posts at Vincennes and Kaskaskia, and so saved our territory and the whole north-west to the American cause. This exploit at the time was quite unknown east of the Alleghanies, but in the peace negotiations which followed it became one of the most important achievements of the war.

**Importance of Clark's Expedition to American Cause**

While Major Lernoult was actively engaged on the new fort at Detroit, stories of Colonel Clark's success had reached Michilimackinac, where Major Patrick Sinclair was in command. Sinclair realized that the palisade of the

mainland would offer slight resistance to the daring backwoods colonel, who was undaunted by distance, floods, or famine.

In the autumn of 1779, the construction of a new fort upon the island was begun. The work was prosecuted with intermittent vigor, so that the summer of 1781 was well advanced before the troops and traders were ensconced in their island home.

**General Haldimand, Governor of Canada,** gave to the new fort the name of Mackinac, although for many years the name of the region, Michilimackinac, continued to be applied to it. With the advent of Colonel Sinclair at Michilimackinac, Major De Peyster, who had commanded there, was transferred to Detroit. De Peyster, among many praiseworthy efforts, made grants of land to the settlers. These grants tended to the prosperity of the community and the increase of its population, which in the year given numbered 2,207.

Among the grants given the most liberal was made by De Peyster to himself, being a tract of 5,000 acres. There  
**Grants of Land** seems to be evidences that the commanders at both Detroit and Mackinac were conducting affairs with liberality in their own interests.

With never over 500 troops at Detroit, and much of the time not half the number, and never exceeding 121 at Mackinac, De Peyster, in one year drew as high as 17,000  
**Extravagance of English Commanders** gallons of rum and 138,000 pounds sterling in supplies for claimed distribution alone. The requirements at Mackinac under Sinclair were even greater. Indeed, so peculiar became the operations of Sinclair at Mackinac, that they brought about his imprisonment and ultimate ruin.

Although somewhat restricted, Detroit continued to be the seat of disturbance in the northwest. It was from here

that an expedition under Captain Henry Bird, consisting of some eighty-six whites and from 500 to 1,000 Indians, set forth in March, 1780, to sweep the Americans from the northwestern country. It was here they returned, with nothing to show for the vast expense of the enterprise except a few prisoners and the story of the plundering of two small settlements on the Licking river, a tributary of the Ohio.

**During the Turbulent Times** Detroit was the place of shelter and refuge for such renegades as Simon Girty, who had "all of the vices and none of the virtues of the Indians." From here they penetrated to the distant missions of the Moravians upon the Muskingum, and attempted by threat and artifice to win them and their peaceful Delawares to the English cause.

The persecution of these poor men and their faithful converts forms one of the sad chapters of our early history. They were living peaceful lives when the Detroit emissaries, in 1781, took them from their homes and fruitful fields to the plains about Sandusky to suffer through a winter of direst famine. The wanton and unprovoked

**Massacre of the Moravian Indians** by Americans from Pennsylvania, when they returned to gather a harvest from their wasted fields, is a foul blot upon colonial fame.

A remnant of the mission was finally escorted by Simon Girty and others of his ilk to Detroit, where De Peyster became convinced of the baselessness of the charges made against them. David Zeisberger, the principal missionary, soon sought to draw the dispersed followers about him, and before the close of 1782 their well constructed log houses, some twenty or thirty in number, formed a street in their village of Gnadenhutten (Tents of Grace) on the Clinton river, within the present limits of the city of Mt. Clemens.

Others of the faith soon joined them, and until 1786

when again dispersed, they were a community enjoying the reputation of possessing many virtues. During their short residence the Indian brethren laid out a new and straight road to Detroit. This road, twenty-three and one-half miles in length, known as the Moravian road, was the first wagon way within the interior of our state.

**The Moravian Road** During the Latter Years of the Revolution, England was never able to concentrate her forces against the colonies, because of menacing conditions nearer home. Ireland, with the example of the colonies, was seething with unrest. France was menacing India, and in 1779, Spain began the famous four year siege of Gibraltar. That the contest between Spain and England extended to Michigan territory is not generally known, but such in fact was the case.

In 1776, Bernardo Galvez became the Spanish governor of Louisiana, and gained the reputation for being one of the ablest of the Spanish officials of the new world. In the war between Spain and England, the services of Galvez that tended to the benefit of the colonies were considerable.

**Galvez Planned an Expedition** into the northwestern territory with the idea of expanding the possessions of the Spanish crown, or of gaining possession of territory that, in the final adjustment, might be valuable to Spain as something to offer for the surrender of the stronghold of Gibraltar.

Fort St. Joseph, near the site of the present city of Niles, was the nearest post in possession of the English, and to that point a Spanish expedition started in January, 1781.

**Spanish Flag Over Michigan Territory** It consisted of sixty-five white men and as many Indians under the command of Don Eugenio Puree. They traversed the state of Illinois and approached the St. Joseph river by the way of the Kankakee. To Puree's surprise, he found

the forest village tenanted by but few Indians and by fewer whites.

The fall previous Sinclair at Mackinac had sent an expedition from that place, and forcibly removed from St. Joseph the most of the former. Puree, however, took possession of the fort, and for a few days above its ramparts waved the flag of Spain. He razed the fort to the ground and retraced his way to St. Louis with no trophy of his conquest save the English flag of the demolished fortress.

This expedition, while it resulted in no benefits to Spain, may have been a factor in securing the northwest to the colonies. It may have persuaded the English commissioners to relinquish to the Americans territory, the title for which, if reclaimed, must be contested with Spain.

**The Revolution was Closed** by the preliminary treaty of November 30th, 1782. By the further articles of January 20th, 1783, it was agreed that five months should be the utmost term of hostilities, and that the armies, garrisons, and fleets of England should, with all convenient speed, be withdrawn from the United States. It was soon evident **The English Retain Possession** that the mother country intended to retain possession of the upper country, regardless of her treaty to the contrary.

In August, 1793, Baron Steuben was sent as the representative of the United States to Governor General Haldimand to demand the surrender of the western forts.

**His Mission Was Fruitless.** Haldimand not only refused possession, but uncivilly declined him permission to even visit them.

In May congress had taken means to inform the Indians that hostilities had ceased with Great Britain, and Major Ephraim Douglas was selected to deliver the message to the

Indians of the upper posts. He entered Detroit, as the first representative of the new government, on July 4th, 1783. **First Representative to Michigan** De Peyster refused him permission either to speak upon that subject, or to impart the information that the treaty made the great lakes the boundary between the nations.

Major Douglas took his way to Fort Niagara, where he received the same treatment, and returned to Philadelphia with no results from his mission. On the 3d of September, 1783, the final treaty of peace was signed, and Michigan territory became a part of the United States; although for thirteen years its sovereignty was denied and its possessions held by British arms.

Following the termination of the war, Detroit and its vicinity received a considerable influx of population. Many came not only from New England but from New York and Albany.

The French in greater numbers sought the American side, **Increase of Population** peopled the valley of the Raisin, and dotted with homes the shores from Lake Erie to the St. Clair and the Huron.

The American authorities were illy prepared to force the possession that was rightly theirs. Individuals, the states, and the confederacy were burdened with debts. The continental army was disbanded, and time had not yet recuperated the strength of the people.

**British Occupation of American Soil** was tolerated because it could not well be remedied. For five years following the close of the war, government at Detroit, Michilimackinac, and their dependencies was of the same kind as that administered in the years preceding.

In 1788, Lord Dorchester, Governor General of Canada,

issued a proclamation creating four districts for judicial purposes, Michigan falling within the district of Hesse. The court was known as the Court of Common Pleas, and from its decisions there was no appeal except to the governor and council.

William Dummer Powell was the first judge of this court, assuming his duties in 1790. Subsequent legislation by the council of Upper Canada brought the people of our territorial limits the General Quarter Sessions of the Peace; the jury system, courts of probate, superior courts, and appellate courts of higher jurisdiction.

The last term of court held in Detroit under British authority was concluded on January 29th, 1796. Before the time for another term arrived, an event transpired that made it inexpedient for British authorities to assume jurisdiction in Michigan.

**Throughout the Revolution** the Indians had acted almost entirely with the English, and now that peace was declared they were slow to accept it. There is abundant evidence that they were encouraged by the authorities at Quebec and Detroit to oppose the American government. There were some just causes for Indian apprehension and complaint. They could not view the aggression of the whites upon their ancient preserves without feelings of suspicion and alarm.

**The Six Nations and Western Indians** felt that all treaties which had for their purpose the cession of lands, should be negotiated by the various tribes acting as a confederacy, and not by the individual tribes. In 1784, the government had consummated a treaty with the Six Nations at Fort Stanwix, by which the Indians assumed to relinquish rights to a vast tract of territory north of Pennsyl-



vania, and west of a north and south line four miles east of Niagara.

This treaty was urged against the wishes of the Indians **Indian** who were parties to it, and in opposition to **Treaties** John Brant, the chief of the Mohawks, a man of talent, of education and commanding influence.

Two years later, in 1786, one of the largest and most inspiring councils of Indians gathered near the mouth of the Detroit on the Auglaze river.

**This Great Council** embraced representatives from the Six Nations and the tribes of the northwest to the Mississippi. In the address which they adopted, it was clearly indicated that it was their purpose to insist upon the Ohio river as the westward and northern limits of American aggressions.

Years later their ambassadors reiterated the same idea in formal conference with the commissioners of the United States when they said, "We desire you to consider that our only demand is the peaceable possession of a small part of our once great country. Look back and view the lands from whence we have been driven to this spot. We can retreat no farther, because the country behind hardly affords food for its present inhabitants. We have, therefore, resolved to leave our bones in this small space to which we are now consigned. We shall be persuaded that you mean to do us justice if you agree that the Ohio shall remain the boundary between us."

The justness and pathos of this appeal must awaken our sympathies, but the Star of Empire was leading westward, and fate had decreed that the power of civilization should prevail.

Already homesteads were dotting the valley of the Ohio,

and the Indians obeyed the instincts of self preservation to which they were urged on by designing emissaries.

**Border Warfare in the Ohio Valley** Again the flames of border warfare broke forth with all their fury. In 1790, it was found that, in Kentucky alone, since 1783, more than fifteen hundred men, women, and children had fallen victims to Indian ferocity, or had been carried into captivity.

**With the New Constitution** the government sought to repress the Indian uprisings by vigorous methods. In 1788, Marietta was founded, and the next year General Josiah Harmar led 1,500 men to disaster and defeat in the country of the Miami.

Undaunted, the government, in 1791, placed General Arthur St. Clair, governor of the territory, at the head of 1,400 men. When nearing the Maumee, they were surprised by one thousand Indians and suffered a crushing defeat. More than one-half of his force suffered death in battle, or in subsequent captivity. Defeats only redoubled the energies of the government. It was apparent that there could be no



GEN. ANTHONY WAYNE.

peace until an army of the Union marched, victorious, to the gates of Detroit, so that it should cease to be the haven for marauding expeditions. A campaign with this end in view was inaugurated, and the daring

**General Anthony Wayne** was given its command. He spent the spring and summer of 1793 at Fort Washington, collecting and drilling recruits.

In October he set forth with a well equipped army of

3,000 men. The English, anticipating his movements, moved southward, and in 1794, erected and garrisoned a fort at the rapids of the Maumee, called Fort Miami.

Wayne spent the winter at Fort Grenville, while he sought for a pacific adjustment. Failing in this, he advanced almost under the guns of Fort Miami, and on the 20th of August fought what was, to the Indian **Battle of the Fallen Timbers** confederation, the disastrous battle of Fallen Timbers. This battle forever broke their power as a serious menace and forced them to the Peace of Grenville, ratified August 3, 1795. By the terms of this treaty they relinquished the six-mile strip of land adjoining the Detroit River from the Raisin to Lake St. Clair.

At Michilimackinac they conveyed the "lands on the island, on which the fort stands," together with a piece of territory three miles deep and six long upon the north shore. Island De Bois Blanc was styled "an extra and voluntary gift of the Chippewa nation." In other sections to the southward their cessions were of rich and vast extent.

Wayne did not at once march his army upon Detroit, as its inhabitants expected. At the request of Washington, he halted to await the fulfillment of the terms of the treaty **Jay's Treaty with Great Britain** with Great Britain that had been recently negotiated by John Jay, and which had been ratified by the Senate on June 8, 1795. This treaty, when made public, was the occasion of great indignation throughout the New England states because of its commercial restrictions.

Time has shown that it was the best that could be obtained. It provided for the surrender of the western posts at a date not later than June 1, 1796, and so "Mad Ant-

thony," as General Wayne was sometimes called, waited for the passage of the time.

**While the Mother Country** had now removed the last obstacle to American possession, her partisans did not propose to see the rich fur trade of Michigan pass beyond British control without one last effort to maintain it. Between January and August of 1795, some ten or eleven of the principal merchants of Detroit took to themselves grants, or pretended grants, of all the lands eastward of about the present principal meridian, and south of Saginaw Bay, including other lands in northern Ohio.

At about the same time, no doubt in furtherance of the same scheme, a company was formed with its promoters in **Formation of Company to Control Fur Trade** Detroit and across the river to purchase the entire lower peninsula of Michigan at a million dollars, or a smaller sum if possible. Proposals were made to Congress, and when the matter was presented December 28, 1795, a certain member arose and disclosed attempts at corruption in the furtherance of the project. The result was the total failure of the project, and the impeachment of one of its agents for contempt of Congress.

This was the expiring effort of the sovereignty assumed by Great Britain, when Colonel Rogers raised the Cross of St. George over Fort Pontchartrain, thirty-six years before. On the 16th day of June, 1796, Great Britain withdrew her garrison according to stipulation, and on the 11th day of July a detachment from the small but victorious army marched in.

From the ramparts of Fort Lernoult, henceforth known as Fort Shelby,

**Old Glory** was flung to the breeze, an emblem of peace

and of the rule of a free people. General Wayne remained in command until November, when he started eastward.

**Death of General Wayne** Fate had decreed that he should never reach his destination. He fell a victim to disease and died at Presque Isle. His name is perpetuated in the name of the first county of the state, as well as in the fort that stands within its limits. His memory will ever remain among the conspicuous in the early history of our state and the great northwest.

### REVIEW.

What separate governments were established in 1763, by whom, and under what treaty? How large was Detroit at this time? How was government administered at this time in Michigan? What was the sole purpose which the English sought to achieve? Compare the spirit of the colonists of New England at this time with those of the great northwest. What was the design of the Quebec Act, when was it passed, and with what results? Who was the first civil officer of the English period? What can you say of his power? Describe the incident of attempting to administer justice at this time. How was the lack of courts provided for? Of what importance was Detroit in the Revolution? Who proposed accepting aid from the Indians in this war? Tell of some of their depredations. How did the pioneers retaliate? Who was George Rogers Clark? What provision was made by Virginia for the relief of the frontiersmen? Describe Clark's plan and his expedition into Illinois. Tell of the capture of Kaskaskia. How did Father Gibault aid the American cause? What effect had the news of the surrender of Kaskaskia and Vincennes upon the authorities at Detroit? What expedition was planned and what were the results? Who was Col. Francis Vigo? Describe the recapture of Fort Vincennes. What other expeditions did he wish to undertake? Why were these ideas abandoned? Of what importance was Col. Clark's work? When and why was a new fort constructed at Michilimackinac? How did it come to be called Mackinac? Tell of the liberality with which De Peyster administered. Describe Detroit as a seat of military operations at this time. What is the Moravian faith? Give an account of De Peyster's treatment of the Moravians. Why was it impossible for England to control her colonies? What four nations raised their flags over Michigan and claimed her as a part of their territory? Give approximate dates of each occupation. Why did Spain desire Michigan? Give an account of the expedition under Purce. How did the English disregard the treaty provisions of 1782-3? What new government had been established at this time on this continent and how were its representatives received? What changes in population of Michigan immediately followed the close of the Revolution? Were they welcomed? Why were they tolerated? How was the judicial system changed in 1788? Why did British authorities assume jurisdiction at this time? Why were the Indians slow to accept the terms of the treaty? What were some of the provisions of the treaty made with the Indians in 1784? How did the Indians view these aggressions? How did the settlement of the Ohio valley affect them? Tell of the efforts of the government to repress opposition: (a) General St. Clair's effort; (b) General Wayne's expedition. Of what importance was the battle of Fallen Timbers? Give the chief provisions of the Peace of Greenville. Why had Wayne planned to march upon Detroit? Why did he not do this at once? When did Great Britain give up her claim to Michigan territory? In what ways did English sympathizers seek to retain the control of the fur trade for the mother country? When and where was "Old Glory" first raised in Michigan? What became of General Wayne?

## CHAPTER VIII.

### A PART OF THE NORTHWEST TERRITORY.

**With the Closing of the Revolution** the original states found themselves possessed of a vast tract of country, roughly bounded by the Ohio, the Great Lakes, and the Mississippi, as well as extensive territory to the southward. What we know as the northwest was in whole or in part soon claimed by several states.

Massachusetts and Connecticut traced their ancient charter limitations westward to the Mississippi. They would **The Great Northwest** have gone farther but for the fact that they were stopped by a foreign power. New York made claims to all the territory west of the Alleghanies and north of the Ohio.

Virginia not only based her claim upon her colonial patent, but also upon the fact that, with force of arms, she had taken the territory from the English, and had established counties and exercised jurisdiction within it.

**The Situation Was Vexatious** enough by reason of the number of rival claimants. It was made more so by the fact that five states, Pennsylvania, Maryland, New Jersey, Delaware, and Rhode Island, were without tangible claim in the vast domain. It is one of the most striking evidences of the pervading spirit of patriotic restraint, which characterized the time, that all these states yielded their several claims to the general welfare.

Each by appropriate acts of cession surrendered their

**Cession of  
Claims to  
General  
Govern-  
ment**

rights and titles to the general government. Connecticut was the last to relinquish her claim. She did this under authority of an act of May 11, 1786, reserving, as had Virginia, certain lands for the use of soldiers of the revolution and other purposes.

**Many a New Englander**, worn by long years of war and oppressed by debt, was already looking to the valley of the Ohio as the land where he could gather to himself some of the blessings for which he had suffered.

Pioneers had blazed the way, and others were impatient to follow. Congress was in session in New York in July, 1787, when Dr. Manassah Cutler of Ipswich, Mass., appeared as the agent of extensive interests, seeking lands on the east of the Scioto river. His mission was successful in the purchase of five million acres of land.

On July 13, 1787, Congress passed an act "for the government of the territory of the United States, northwest of the river Ohio," known to history as

**The "Ordinance of 1787."** Next to the Declaration of Independence and the Federal Constitution, this ordinance is the most celebrated state document in our history. It was adopted by the congress of the confederacy, while the convention was formulating the federal constitution in Philadelphia.

On the date of the adoption of this famous act, there were but eighteen members present to give it their support, but into it went the ideas of many great men, including those of Thomas Jefferson. He had formulated not only the Virginia act of cession, but he had drawn an act for the government of the territory in which were included many of the wise provisions of the Ordinance of 1787.

The measure provided for a scheme of government by a

governor, secretary, and three judges. The governor and judge adopted the laws, which the judges, as the highest judicial body, enforced.

The most significant provisions of the Ordinance were contained in six articles. The first of these provided for religious liberty. The second was a comprehensive bill of rights. The third was prefaced by that sentence which has been so expressive of the sentiment of the northwest: "Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government, and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged." The fourth declared, that the states to be formed from the territory should forever remain a part of the confederacy and should share in its obligations; that the navigable waters and conveying places should remain forever free.

The fifth provided that not less than three, nor more than five, states should be formed from the territory, and that each should be admitted to the Union under constitutions as they attained sixty thousand population.

This article contained a provision which was the cause of much state conflict. It was to the effect that should Congress elect to form five states from the territory, that the southerly boundary of the two northerly states should be "an east and west line drawn through the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan."

The sixth contained a provision that may be justly said to have changed the course of American history, for in the following language it dedicated five great states to freedom: "There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in the said territory, otherwise than in the punishment of crime, whereof the party shall have been duly convicted."



**The Authorship of This Provision** has been claimed for many. That it was first framed by Thomas Jefferson is certain. That it was subsequently incorporated by Nathan Dane, at the instance of Virginia, has a more substantial basis than surmise.

Why Virginia, a slave holding state, took this position is explainable upon but one ground. Virginia expected to maintain and increase her prestige and ascendancy by keeping her population within her established limits, while she weakened New York and her northern neighbors by depleting their population to people the distant lands. Her statesmen little saw that a half century would witness the creation of five states within the territory northwest of the Ohio River, and that their millions of population, reared upon soil which her voice had dedicated to freedom, should become the deciding factor in the contest against her when the inevitable conflict was to be settled by the arbitrament of arms.

Congress was not long in putting into effect the government provided for by the Ordinance. On October 5, 1787,

**General Arthur St. Clair** of Pennsylvania, who was with Wolfe at Quebec, and a soldier of the revolution, was chosen governor. Winthrop Sargent, an able citizen of Massachusetts, was made secretary. Later **First Officers of Northern Territory** Samuel H. Parsons of Connecticut, James M. Varnum of Rhode Island, and John C. Symmes of New Jersey were constituted judges.

On the 15th of July, 1788, Governor St. Clair, attended by the officers of the new government, made formal entry into Marietta amid imposing cere-



GEN. ARTHUR ST. CLAIR.

monies and primitive surroundings; for Marietta had been founded on the 7th of April previous.

The county of Washington was soon established, and the machinery of civil government was in motion in the northwest. It was ready to move into Michigan when the opportunity should arrive. The opportunity came with the evacuation of Detroit and Mackinac.

On August 15, 1796, Secretary Sargent, in the absence of Governor St. Clair, by proclamation, created the county of Wayne, whose extensive boundaries, suffice it to say, included the whole of the lower peninsula of Michigan, as well as lands in the northern part of the present states of Ohio and Indiana.

It also included the territory west of Lake Michigan, of which that lake received the drainage, and north to the national boundary in Lake Superior.

**Wayne County**, while still the principal county of Michigan, is somewhat shrunk from its original dimensions. Secretary Sargent soon visited Detroit, and created a court of limited jurisdiction, a court of five lay judges known as the court of common pleas.

**The Supreme Court** of the northwest territory, which had formerly met at Marietta, Cincinnati, Vincennes, and Kaskaskia, now included Detroit within its circuit. When Sargent returned to Marietta, he left Wayne county equipped with its quota of officials, both civil and military. The community was far from American in its characteristics. Thirty-six years of English occupation had left little impress upon the people of the straits.

**The Village of Detroit** was still surrounded by its ancient palisade. French was the language of the community. Two-thirds, if not a greater portion of the population, were children of the French regime. All partook of the French indif-

ference and careless gaiety. The ribbon-like farms of the inhabitants extended back from the water's edge, leaving the buildings in close proximity along a common street. On many a dwelling, barn, and gate the crucifix stood, the silent symbol of their unchanging faith. Along the river bank, the only objects that caught the eye of the traveler and lent interest to the scene were the stone towers, standing as sentinels on every point and headland, and supporting the quaint old windmills, whose slow revolving sails ground the grists of the family harvest. There was little to indicate an approaching change.

But the old regime was at an end, and although the growth of population and free institutions within our territory was destined to be slow and beset with vicissitudes, yet the beginning had been made, and Detroit was to be a place of continuing growth and importance.

In 1798, the northwest territory had acquired the necessary population to entitle it to representation in the general assembly, provided for in the Ordinance of 1787. At the elections which were held to fill the positions, the electors voting *viva voce*, Solomon Sibley, Jacob Visger, and Charles F. Chabert de Joncaire were chosen members for the county of Wayne.

**The Legislature Met at Cincinnati** February 4, 1799, and transacted much business. One of its most important actions was the selection of General William Henry Harrison as the first delegate to congress.

It was this legislative body sitting at Chillicothe, to which place the capital had been removed by act of congress, that on January 18, 1802, passed an act incorporating the town of Detroit with a board of trustees empowered to make by-

laws and ordinances for its regulation, a dignity which our metropolis had been a century in assuming.

In 1800, congress had provided that after the fourth day of July in that year, all that portion of the northwest territory west of the meridian of Fort Recovery **Indiana Territory** should constitute the territory of Indiana. Vincennes became its first capital, and William Henry Harrison its first Governor.

This arrangement plainly contemplated the three state plan for the northwest. The line passed a few miles west of Mackinac and threw the western half of our lower peninsula into the new formed territory. The eastern portion, which embraced all the population, remained with Ohio.

A movement was soon on foot for the creation of a new state.

**Ohio** had not yet attained much more than half the required sixty thousand, but on the 30th of April, 1802, congress authorized the people in that part of the territory east of Indiana and south of the Ordinance line to adopt a constitution.

Wayne county was thus severed from her southern connection, and without a voice in the matter, was attached to Indiana. This was done against the protests of her people and the protests of considerable portions of the people of Ohio.

**Wayne County Becomes a Part of Indiana** It was a political move that created great dissatisfaction at Detroit at the time, for the people of Wayne county thereby lost their right of representation, being placed with Indiana, and were made subject to the rule of the governor and judges.

**The Union with Indiana** was to be of brief duration. At this distance, nothing remains either as to legislation or

**State of Ohio** events of public interest. Ohio became a state by an act of congress under date of February 19, 1803. A strong movement was soon inaugurated at Detroit for a Michigan Territory.

About this time congress, by an appropriate act, made provision whereby section sixteen of each township should be reserved for school purposes, and that an entire township **Educational Fund** in each of the districts from which the states of Michigan, Indiana, and Illinois have been formed, and to which the Indian title had been extinguished, should be reserved for a seminary of learning. This important act was passed on March 26, 1804. It was the germ of the

**University and Primary School funds of Michigan.** On January 11, 1805, the movement for a Michigan Territory bore fruit in the form of a congressional enactment which provided "that from and after the 30th day of June next, all that part of Indiana territory which lies north of a line drawn east from the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan, **Territory of Michigan** until it shall intersect Lake Erie, and east of a line drawn from the said southerly bend through the middle of said lake to its northern extremity, and thence due north to the northern boundary of the United States, shall for the purposes of temporary government, constitute a separate territory, and be called Michigan."

By the same act, the ordinance of 1787 became our territorial charter, and Detroit our seat of government. Although the oldest inhabited region of the northwest, Michigan was still untrodden, vast, and wild.

Mackinac, Detroit, and Frenchtown, with a few intervening river settlements, constituted its populous communities. In 1800, its census showed a population of 3,206, while ten

**Population** years later it was but 1,456 more, at which time 1,650 were citizens of Detroit. No one except Indian bands and occasional traders sought the interior, for not a tree had been felled in the solemn forest, five miles from the shore.

**As Michigan** was about to begin her territorial career, it was important that her officials who should be charged with the guidance of her destiny should be men fitted by temperament and experience for their peculiar duties. Unfortunately for Michigan, such were not chosen.

For Governor, President Jefferson appointed William Hull of Massachusetts, whose services as an officer in the revolution had earned him an honorable fame, but **First Officers of Michigan Territory** whose age and temperament unfitted him for the satisfactory discharge of the duties of his responsible post.

The office of the secretary was filled by Stanley Griswold from Connecticut, whom Judge Campbell says "was only comfortable when he had his own way."

The court was composed of Augustus Brevoort Woodward, Samuel Huntington, and Frederick Bates. Huntington scenting trouble, declined the appointment, and John Griffin was placed in his stead.

Bates and Griffin were both Virginians. The former had, at the date of his appointment, seen service at Detroit as a resident land officer.

Woodward, at the time of his appointment, was a resident of the District of Columbia. He was a man of marked intellectual abilities, but they were associated with eccentricities of such a perverse and contentious nature as marked him one of the most picturesque characters in the early history of the state.

**The Governor Reached Detroit** on the 1st of July, 1805.

Some of the other officials preceded him a day or two. They found the village of Detroit a desolation; nothing remained to mark its site but a few ghostly chimneys and two buildings, a small bakery and a warehouse. On the 11th of June a fire had swept all else away, and the dejected people were with friends across the river or unhoused in the adjacent fields.

On the 2nd of July, the Governor administered the oath of office to his associates, a "bower" for the use of the court was constructed, and the work of government begun.

For judicial purposes the territory was divided into three districts known as the districts of Erie, Detroit, and Huron. Later a fourth district was created called the district of Mackinaw. The names of the districts sufficiently indicate the territory that each was designed to serve.

Matters of small importance were left to the disposal of justices of the peace. A court of intermediary jurisdiction was created for each district, while the supreme court reserved to itself jurisdiction over all land cases and concurrent jurisdiction over civil cases, involving at first \$200 and later \$500. The courts had the general powers of an appellate court. The district courts survived until 1809.

**The Governor and His Associates** actively exerted themselves, during the summer of 1805, towards the relief of the stricken inhabitants.

Governor Hull and Judge Woodward repaired to Washington, where they passed the winter of 1805 and 1806, urging needed legislation for the territory. They were partly successful.

In April, 1806, congress gave the governor and judge authority to lay out a

**New Town of Detroit**, and appropriated 10,000 acres of

land for its purpose. It was September 13, 1806, before the basis of the town was laid. The plan of the city was the creation of Judge Woodward.

The old lines of the town were disregarded, and grand avenues radiated from the Grand Circus and Campus Martius into the adjacent forest. The inhabitants who looked upon the town, which a century had hardly raised to the dimensions of a respectable village, found in the pretentious plan of the eccentric judge much to excite their mirth and derision, which correspondingly excited the ire of its author.

After much delay, the inhabitants of the old town were granted lots within the new, and the village slowly resumed an orderly appearance. Farm lands were in an equally chaotic condition.

**A Land Office was Opened**, in 1804, by the general government at Detroit, and the register and receiver were made a board to examine into the legality of the titles by which lands outside of Detroit were held. By actual count 442 farms were found, but out of the number but six could show valid titles.

In a spirit of fairness, the government, in 1807, granted to all persons or their heirs who had been owners or occupants of lands prior to 1796, the lands so owned or occupied by them, and not exceeding 640 acres in extent.

During this same year General Hull negotiated a new treaty with the Ottawas, Chippewas, Wyandottes, and Potawatamies, whereby the Indian title was extinguished to the southern portion of the territory. **Land Titles and Boundaries** This tract was bounded, on its west and north, by what is now our principal meridian to a point due west of the site of Fort Gratiot, and from thence northeasterly to White Rock, in Lake Huron.



Many square miles of rich lands were thus at the disposal of the government, yet it was many years before they were surveyed or put upon the market, much to the disadvantage of the territory, whose development was thus retarded

**In the Rebuilding of the Village**, the people built on the most primitive plans and of the simplest materials. The most of the buildings were upon Atwater street, and in 1807, as rumors of Indian unrest were again prevalent, a new palisade was constructed enclosing a considerable area by the river side, within which were the new homes of the people.

For several years conditions showed little improvement. Frequent quarrels between Judge Woodward and the Governor, and others who came within his displeasure, brought not only the agent of the government, but its administration, into disrepute, if not contempt.



REV. FR. GABRIEL RICHARD.

No copy of the school law of 1809 has been preserved, but we know that schools were in existence as early as 1802. Even many years later they were little more than rudimentary. In the history of these days, there is one figure that stands out in noble proportions, a vigorous, helpful spirit

amid discord and inaction. It is that of

**Father Gabriel Richard**, one of the order of St. Sulpice. From his arrival at Detroit, in 1798, until his death, as the pastor of the parish of St. Anne, he gave his splendid

talents unreservedly for the benefit of the whole people of Detroit and the territory at large.

It was in 1809 that Father Richard brought out the first printing press of the territory. In the same year, he commenced the publication of a small newspaper bearing the title of the MICHIGAN ESSAY OR IMPARTIAL OBSERVER. Although the issues of the paper were irregular and not long continued, they marked the beginning of the first paper published within the territory.

**Father Richard's Efforts** extended to many fields. He made use of the printing press he had imported to produce a few books of his own compilation. He lent the aid of his cultured mind to the cause of education, and was ever the willing servant of the people, as he was the spiritual shepherd of his flock.

Detroit was hardly settled in the new abodes when disquieting rumors as to Indian intrigues and war with England again filled the settlement with alarm. The English, although removed from our territory, had never ceased to bestow annual presents upon the Indians whom they had left behind. From their border military and fur trading stations, they continued to exert an influence inimical to American interests.

**Tecumseh, the Great Shawnee Chieftain**, and his brother, the Prophet, were beginning to wield a strange and mysterious influence over the Indians of vastly separated regions.

In 1809, Governor Hull heard the rumors, and on the 28th of August he met the Ottawa and Chippewa nations at Michilimackinac, and in an address, sought to win their favor. The following month the famous Wyandotte chief, Walk-in-the-water, and his people, in special council at

Brownstown, plainly told Governor Hull of their dissatisfaction at the growing encroachments of the whites upon the Indians' preserve.

**The Indian Was Suffering** in more ways than from the loss of his hunting grounds. Contact with the white race was imparting many vices and few virtues.



TECUMSEH.

Tecumseh, as brave and chivalrous an Indian as white men ever knew, could not look upon the degradation of his race without resolving, if possible, to stay the hand of fate. He always contended that lands should be taken only with the consent of all the tribes, and not with the consent of isolated bands.

He saw what Pontiac and Brant had foreseen, and vainly strove to unite his people of the northwest to present a united front against the aggressions of an alien race.

His brother, the Prophet, used his arts to induce the forest denizens to return to their primitive life and to drive

**Another** the white men from his lands. Tecumseh  
**Indian** made claim that his efforts were peaceful.

**Outbreak** That he meditated the destruction of the frontier posts, is certain. That he hoped for assistance from the British in a war which he knew to be imminent, is presumable. Before his plans could be matured,

**General William Henry Harrison** marched against the Prophet's town near Lafayette, and there, on November 7, 1811, was fought the memorable battle of Tippecanoe. It could be quite truly called the opening battle of the war of 1812, for it drove the Indians to the British, and made Michigan territory the scene of its opening campaign.

**The Battle of Tippecanoe**, although a victory to American arms, was the occasion of much apprehension among the inhabitants of Michigan.

An impending war with England, with whom was to be leagued the Indian horde, presented a most direful prospect. Michigan as yet had scarcely five thousand souls. Her two forts at Mackinac and Detroit were but feebly garrisoned, and even they would be unable to subsist for very long on the supplies of the country.

**The British Fleet** was mistress of the lakes, and for the time, able to effectually block succor from that direction. To bring supplies by land, meant to traverse a wilderness trail of some two hundred miles to the Ohio settlements. To keep such a means of communication open, involved a task of great proportions.

**The People of Michigan** were keenly alive to all the conditions, and in December, 1811, the leading citizens of Detroit signed a memorial to congress, calling attention to the critical condition of the territory and petitioning for means for its defense.

About the same time, Governor Hull went in person to Washington to add the weight of his personal views to the petitions of his constituents. Many of the statesmen of that day refused to look upon Canada as a source of any danger to the United States. Many believed that the Canadians needed only to be given the opportunity to become the active allies of the American Cause. Mr. Clay said, "We can take Canada without soldiers; we have only to send officers into the province, and the people, disaffected towards their own government, will rally around our standard."

**Governor Hull Knew Better** than this, and so informed congress. There were others who held no such optimistic views as Mr. Clay regarding Canada as a place for "self

conquest," although he represented the attitude of the then dominant party.

However, steps were taken to provide a force to meet the exigencies of the Michigan frontier. Governor Hull was offered the command, which he very wisely declined. After Colonel Kingsbury, to whom the command was given, was disabled by sickness from assuming it, he unwisely accepted.

Governor Hull had already declared that the command of the lakes was essential to the command of Michigan, and the war department should have been persuaded, and Governor Hull himself convinced, that with a few Michigan volunteers and 2,000 Ohio Militia, he could not make the kind of a campaign the government expected.

On May 25, 1802, Governor Hull at the head of 300 regulars under Colonel Miller, and three regiments of militia numbering 1,200 men under Colonels McArthur, Cass, and Findlay, began their march from Dayton. They reached the rapids of the Maumee by the end of June. Here they placed the sick and heavy baggage, together with official papers showing the full strength of his force, upon a vessel for transportation to Detroit.

**War Had Been Declared** against Great Britain June 18. British authorities lost no time in notifying their Canadian outposts, and as Hull's vessel passed into the Detroit, she was captured by the garrison at Malden.

Governor Hull has been criticised for sending official papers and military stores by the water route, where the chances were good for their falling into the hands of the enemy. As a military commander, he should have chosen a course less liable to danger, but his dereliction in this respect was small compared with that of the war department. War had been declared upon the 18th of June. Gov-

**Loss of  
Official  
Papers and  
Military  
Stores**

ernor Hull was not notified until the 2d day of July, although a messenger could have brought him the intelligence a week earlier.

Hull and his troops arrived at Detroit July 5, and the men, at least, proceeded with enthusiasm to prepare for the coming contest. Four days later, orders arrived from the war department to General Hull, investing him with discretionary power to either proceed against Malden or remain on the defensive.

**Malden Was a Commanding Position**, and its capture was of vital importance. It had but a small garrison, and had the general moved with vigor it would have fallen into his hands. He crossed the Detroit, dispersed a small force at Sandwich, and dispatched Colonel Cass with 280 men to reconnoiter in the direction of Malden.

Colonel Cass and his command went as far as the bridge over the Aux Canards, four miles from Malden, where they dislodged the British picket guard, and captured the bridge with a loss of ten to the enemy.

The troops were anxious to push on to Malden, but General Hull delayed, hoping for artillery. In the meantime, he issued a proclamation to the people of Canada, inviting them **Hull's Pro-** to place themselves under the protection of the **clamation** United States; but Clay's prophecy did not seem to be realized.

While awaiting artillery and Canadian recruits, General Hull received information that a detachment under Captain Brush was at the River Raisin, conveying supplies from Governor Meigs of Ohio for Detroit, and sent Major Van Horn with 200 men to strengthen the escorts.

**The Commander at Malden** received information as to the movement, and during the night a body of Indians was

thrown across the river near Brownstown. Under cover of darkness, they fell upon Van Horn, who, finding himself unable to contend against the enemy, retreated to Detroit, leaving eighteen dead upon the field.

**The News from Mackinaw**, which now arrived, was far from assuring, as at Malden, the British at the fur trading station on the St. Joseph were early informed of the state of war. Gathering a large force of Canadians and Indians, Captain Charles Roberts, having first learned of conditions at Mackinac through a traitorous American, landed at the island early on the morning of the 17th of July.

By 9 o'clock, a. m., he gave Lieut. Hanks, who was in command of the fort with fifty-seven men, his first news **The British** that war existed between this country and Eng-  
**Capture** land, by commanding his surrender. He sur-  
**Mackinac** rendered two hours later, the greatly superior force of the British leaving him no other alternative.

**Days of Delay** and indecision followed until the arrival of the information that General Brock was approaching with the reinforcements for Malden. General Hull, on the 7th day of August, recrossed the river to Detroit with a haste that had every appearance of flight.

Upon gaining the Michigan side General Hull dispatched Lieut. Colonel Miller with 600 men to do what Van Horn had failed to do—open communication with the River Raisin. At the Monguagon, they encountered a considerable force of British and Indians under Major Muir and Tecum-  
**Battle** seh. From the dense forests this force poured a  
**of the** galling fire into the American troops. With true  
**Monguagon** heroism, Colonel Miller and his brave men advanced into the timber, where they delivered a single fire and then used their bayonets.

**The British and Indians** were driven from their lurking places, the former retreating under range of armed vessels

anchored in the river, and the Indians scattering in the forest. The American loss was eighteen killed and ninety wounded. A severe rain storm coming on, the troops fell back upon Detroit. It was now determined to bring in the supplies by another route farther back from the river.

On August 14, Colonels Cass and McArthur, with 350 of the best troops, were sent forward for that purpose. On the same day General Brock arrived at Malden, and on the 15th he appeared at Sandwich with 1,300 troops, and sent **Brock** across a demand to General Hull for the **Demands** surrender of his fort and garrison. Upon refusal, **Surrender** a few cannon shot were directed toward the fort from whence they were answered with considerable effect. Indecision was the marked characteristic of Governor Hull's movements for the day.

**Surrender** On the morning of the 16th General Brock's **of Gen. Hull** force, numbering about 750 men, was seen crossing the river. They advanced upon Springwells without opposition. Here they halted while a second summons to surrender was sent forward. In a short time the red uniforms of the British and their half naked allies under Maissot, Walk-in-the-water, and Tecumseh were seen advancing. Not a bridge had been destroyed. Not a detachment had been posted along the woods and orchards through which their course lay.



ALEXANDER MACOMB.\*

General Hull had cannon planted and sufficient troops ready and anxious for the fray to have resisted an immediate

---

\*Eminent American general, born at Detroit, April 3, 1782. He rose to the rank of major-general in the war of 1812. He was connected with the military operation in the east, where his distinguished service secured for himself a gold medal and the thanks of Congress. He became commander-in-chief of the army in 1835, a position which he held until his death in Washington, D. C., June 25th, 1835. Macomb county was named in his honor.



attack, if not to have won a substantial victory. As the British approached, General Hull suddenly gave orders that the detachment posted outside the pickets and on the ramparts should retire within the fort, while the flag of the nation was lowered from its place without a blow being struck in its defense.

**The White Flag of Surrender** was carried to General Brock, while American soldiers within the fort dashed their muskets to the ground, or shed tears of shame and indignation.

At the time of the surrender of the fort, according to Colonel Cass, Hull had a force of 1,000 men, and among the munitions turned over were forty barrels of powder, four hundred rounds of twenty-four pound shot, one hundred thousand ball cartridges, twenty-four thousand stand of arms, thirty-five iron and brass cannon, with provisions sufficient for many days.

Had a battle been protracted for a short time, the detachment of Colonels Cass and McArthur would have been in the rear of the invaders, for they were but a few miles distant at the time of the surrender, in which they were included, although not present.

At the news of Hull's surrender, a wave of indignation swept over the nation. People were persuaded that, from corrupt motives, he had betrayed his flag and country.

He was tried by court martial at Albany on the charge of treason and other lesser specifications, and although **Trial and** acquitted on the first charge he was found **Conviction** guilty of the lesser ones, and sentenced to be **of Gen.** shot. He was afterwards pardoned by the **Hull** president, as it is stated, because of his service in the revolution.

It is presumed that the president realized that the blun-

ders of the administration in the early days of the war were quite as unexplainable as the action of General Hull.

Armies no more favorably placed than was General Hull's have won great victories. With a Gladwin or a Clark at their head they would have done so in Michigan.

The same vacillating spirit that lost Detroit, lost Fort Dearborn at Chicago. After the surrender of Mackinac, **Other American Reverses** Governor Hull ordered Captain Heald and his garrison at Chicago to fall back upon Fort Wayne. This they attempted to do on August 15. The heroic captain and his spartan band of sixty, escorting some twelve families, had proceeded but a little way when they were set upon by a large force of Indians, and but a third part escaped the tomahawk and scalping knife.

**The Loss of Michigan** and the lake country, though galling to national pride, had one important result. It stirred not only the northwest, but the whole nation to vigorous action. From every quarter, troops were hurried to threatened parts, and energetic measures inaugurated to recover what had been lost.

Recruits from Ohio and Kentucky came forward even before their services were demanded by the general government. The army of the west, with General Harrison at its head, was soon spreading devastation among the Indian villages of northern Ohio and Indiana.

In January, 1813, General Harrison was at Sandusky and General Winchester at Defiance, both preparing for the **Campaign for the Recapture of Michigan** spring campaign, which was to be for the repossession of Michigan. General Brock at once removed British headquarters to Detroit, where he proceeded to institute civil government, declaring by proclamation that the American laws

should continue in force as long as the peace and safety of the territory would admit.

Colonel Henry Proctor was made civil governor, and had he followed the wise counsel of General Brock, a man of humane and generous nature, our history would have missed some of its sad and gruesome recitals.

At first Proctor was wise and considerate in his management of affairs, but he soon showed, by petty tyrannies, and ungenerous conduct, that he was a man of few sympathies and a narrow mind.

**It Was at This Crisis** that Judge Woodward was able to render valuable service to the people by softening the asperities of their irresponsible governor. Proctor at Detroit was giving full license to his savage associates, and the lonely settlers became the victims of many indignities.

The inhabitants of Frenchtown were especially subjected to Indian annoyances. In January, their complaints reached General Harrison at Sandusky, and he ordered General Winchester to move forward to the rapids of the Maumee, which he promptly did.

From here he sent Colonel Lewis forward to Frenchtown with some 700 men to repel the threatened attack of the **Battle of** Indians upon the settlement. They arrived on **French-** January 18, 1813, and after a sharp engage- **town** ment, drove away a considerable force of British and Indians. Sending information to Winchester, that officer came up with some 250 reinforcements, arriving on the 21st. The weather was intensely cold, the river being frozen so that there was easy passage to Malden, eighteen miles distant.

**Early in the Evening**, information came to Winchester that about 3,000 British and Indians were preparing to leave Malden. He gave it no heed and took no defensive precau-

tions, leaving the only road over which a force could come from Malden unguarded. He, himself, took shelter for the night in a Frenchman's home on the opposite side of the river.

During the night, Proctor, with a large force of British regulars and Indians, arrived and took up a position behind a ravine. With the sounding of the reveille on the morning of the 22d, they unmasked a battery that belched forth a storm of grape and cannon shot to which was added the crack of rifles and the hideous yells of the Indians. The suddenness of the onset and the lack of preparation on the part of the Americans threw them into panic. Winchester was soon captured and his forces in confusion.

Majors Madison and Graves, with their original forces within the pickets surrounding the village, were able to repel the repeated attacks of the British and Indians. Proctor, in the meantime, so worked upon the fears of Winchester as to the fate of the troops, in case hostilities were protracted, that Winchester at last sent a flag to Major Madison with an order to surrender his troops as prisoners of war.

Even then the brave Madison refused until he had the promise of Proctor that the lives of the soldiers should be **Major** protected; that sleighs should be provided the **Madison** next morning with which to transport the **Surrenders** wounded to Amherstburg; that private property should be respected; and that the side arms of the officers should be restored at Malden.

**The Terms of Surrender Completed,** Proctor with his regulars and the greater part of the Indians, retraced their steps to Malden, leaving the lifeless forms of the brave Kentuckians dotting the adjacent fields. Early the next

morning the Indians were seen returning, their savage natures inflamed by intoxication.

They at once began one of the most atrocious massacres that ever befouled the pages of northwestern history. With **Massacre by Indians** Proctor's departure the wounded had been placed in two houses. Into these the Indians broke and began the murder of the stricken inmates.

Later, they set fire to the buildings and shot the poor unfortunates as they tumbled from the burning windows. It was a day of frightful doings. In barbaric details and fiendish cruelties, it has hardly been surpassed.

**The Close of the Fearful Day** saw 600 Americans prisoners of war and 397 dead, the greater number being the defenseless wounded, who were the victims of the Indian war club and tomahawk, to which Proctor's cruel treachery had granted full license. The destitute inhabitants were ordered to Detroit. Harrison hurried to Winchester's assistance but was too late. Commander and army had been swept away, and the repossession of Michigan was still further in the future. Even General Harrison seemed undecided what to do. He at once abandoned the Rapids, but soon returned, determined to hold the position at any cost. Men were set to work upon a stronger fort, thenceforth to be known as Fort Meigs.

**The Massacre of the Raisin** brought a cry of wrath and vengeance from the great new west. Recruits were hurried to Harrison, who, in the following May, was being besieged by Proctor in Fort Meigs.

More Kentuckians under General Green Clay had arrived, and during the siege, a detachment of some 600 under Colonel Dudley were mostly killed or captured. Here the barbarities of the River Raisin were repeated under the

eyes and approval of Proctor, in sight of the men within the fort. When a stop was put to the barbarous cruelties, it was by Tecumseh, who rebuked Proctor as unfit to command soldiers. In July, a second attempt was made upon Fort Meigs by Proctor and Tecumseh, who were joined by a large body of Indians from Mackinaw and the Green Bay country, collected by Captain Robert Dickson, a noted trader and English partisan. They sought to draw the garrison from the fort and into an ambushade by giving them the impression that reinforcements were at hand, and endeavoring to gain the fort. For a time the adjacent forest resounded with all the noise and tumult of a terrific battle.

General Clay was not deceived, and kept his forces within the fort, notwithstanding their desires to sally forth for the assistance of their supposed beleagured countrymen. The ruse failing, the forces departed, and on the 31st appeared before Fort Stevenson, against which they made a most vigorous assault. Major Croghan's Defense a mere youth of twenty-one, and his 160 brave men held the fort, and repulsed the attacks with such vigor and loss to the enemy that Proctor was obliged to withdraw to Malden.

**It Had Become Very Apparent** that if Michigan was to be retaken and held, it would be necessary to follow the advice given by Hull two years before, and put a fleet in control of Lake Erie. Early in 1813, sailing master Daniel Dobbins, with the assistance of Noah Brown, a ship carpenter of New York, had begun the construction of several vessels at Presque Isle (now Erie), Pennsylvania.

On March 27, 1813, as the two brigs, the Niagara and the Lawrence, were nearing completion,

**Oliver Hazard Perry** of Rhode Island, arrived from Norfolk, Virginia, to assume command. The work was pushed with great energy. Trees were felled in the forest and warped to their places in the vessels before nightfall. The equipment was dragged overland from Pittsburg.

The English lost Fort Erie, opposite Buffalo, which released five small vessels to reinforce the new squadron at Erie. By the 10th of July the fleet was ready to cross the bar and contest for the supremacy of the inland seas. The gallant commander was impatiently waiting for men and a favorable opportunity. Both came in the early days of August.



OLIVER H. PERRY.

The British had been tireless watchers outside the harbor, but they were off guard on the 4th of August and the first American fleet that ever fought in line of battle sailed out upon old Erie's blue. On the 12th, a hundred men having been added to the crews, the fleet set sail for the western extremity of the lake, where, when they arrived, plans for concerted action were made by Perry and General Harrison.

The British fleet was at Malden under command of Captain Barkley, a veteran who had seen service under Nelson. The Americans had nine ships to the British six, manned by 490 men to the British 502. The British had sixty-three guns, the Americans fifty-four. The American guns, although of lower range, hurled one and one-half times the metal of the British.

**Perry Spent Many Days in Preparation,** maneuvering and impatiently awaiting the appearance of the British. On the morning of September 10, the lookout on Gibraltar Island in Put-in-Bay signaled the approach of the British fleet. The Americans sailed out to give battle.

The Lawrence, the flag ship, led the way. At her mast-head was a blue flag bearing in white letters the words of the great commander, whose name she bore, "Don't give up the ship." There was but a light breeze, and for a considerable time the longer range of the British guns gave them the advantage.

At twelve o'clock, while the fleets were still a mile apart, the Lawrence drew the fire of the British fleet, to which **Perry's** she could make but slightly effective answer. **Victory on** With two smaller vessels she forged ahead **Lake Erie** to come within closer range, and for two hours and forty-five minutes she stood the brunt of battle. Broad-side after broadside, which were valiantly returned, tore down her upper works and pierced her side, filling her with dead and wounded. At last out of the crew of 103, but twenty were left unhurt.

At 2:30 Perry, in an open boat, left his flagship and repaired to the Niagara, which, with the remainder of the fleet, had been brought into fortunate position by favorable wind. The blue penant of the flag-ship again waved from the Niagara, and for the first time the whole fleet was in close action. The heavier guns of the Americans now tore gaping wounds through the ships and crews of the **British and** enemy. In eight minutes the battle was won. **American** The Americans had lost 123 men, and the **Loss** British 135 in killed and wounded.

**Perry Told the Story** of the battle in his dispatch to



General Harrison, written on the back of an old letter supported, while being written, on top of his navy cap.

*We have met the enemy and they are ours.  
Two Ships, two Brigs one  
Schooner & one Sloop.*

*Yours, with great respect and esteem  
O J Perry.*

**Proctor Evacuated Malden** to the disgust of Tecumseh, who asked that the supplies and ammunition be left to the Indians, if he did not have the courage to remain and fight.

On the 27th Perry's fleet landed Harrison's army on the Canadian side. They found Malden deserted and its barracks burned.

On the 28th they pushed on to Sandwich, and on the same day General McArthur crossed over to Detroit, and again raised the flag of the Union to the view of an overjoyed community. On the 30th, General Harrison was joined by Richard M. Johnson and his force of mounted riflemen, and the united forces, 3,500 strong, marched after Proctor, who on the 5th of October, was found strongly posted on the River Thames, near the Moravian town thirty miles east of Lake St. Clair.

The battle was short, the British line breaking at the

first impetuous charge of Johnson's cavalry, who, turning in their rear, took many prisoners. The most determined stand was made by Tecumseh and his Indians, but even they gave way before the determined onset of the Americans, who rushed forward with a cry of "Remember the Raisin."

Proctor escaped with 107 officers and 239 men, but his brave ally, Tecumseh, was dead upon the field.

**The Indian Confederacy** was now no more. The defeat left the several tribes in direful straits, but they found in General Harrison a humane conqueror, who could be as helpful in peace as he was vigorous in war.

On the 14th of October, General Harrison, who had repaired to Detroit, appointed General Lewis Cass provisional governor of Michigan territory. The battle of the Thames ended most military operations in the west, although, in 1814, General McArthur conducted an expedition to Lake Ontario and swept back along the shores of Erie.

In the same year, an expedition for the capture of Mackinac resulted in defeat to American arms.

**The British Held the Fort** until the close of the war by the treaty of Ghent, December 24, 1814. On July 18, 1815, formal possession was surrendered to Colonel Butler and his American command. Colonel McDowell and the British garrison retired to Drummond Island, where they laid claim to a post of commanding pretensions. Although the island was American territory, the British at this place, as at Detroit at the close of the revolution, were loath to wholly relinquish their hold upon the northern passage. Here, contrary to treaty stipulations, they continued until November 14, 1828, when they took their departure.

To-day the curious tourist finds only a tangled, vine-grown cemetery, tottering stone chimneys, and aged lombards to tell the story of their years of illegal occupation.

**Michigan Will Ever Owe a Debt** of gratitude to Kentucky, for aid during the trying days of the war of 1812. It was the brave Kentuckians that raised their arms as our **Michigan's** defenders. In their country's service, 17,000 **Debt to** of her noble sons were volunteers and many of **Kentucky** them mingled their ashes with our soil. The names of Shelby and Johnson are worthy to be remembered in the list of those who have ever been willing to give of their talents and services for the benefit of liberty and humanity.

#### REVIEW.

What constituted the great northwest? What states claimed this territory, and upon what were the claims based? When and how were these claims settled? Tell all you can of the adoption of the ordinance of 1787. State some of its chief provisions as to government. Give the substance of the "six articles." Who framed the "article" regarding slavery? In what unexpected ways did this prove an important factor in the Civil War? Give an account of Congress' first movements in putting into effect the government provided by this ordinance. Compare the original Wayne county with the present. Describe Detroit and vicinity at that time. Give an account of the meeting of the first legislature. When was Indiana territory set apart? What constituted this territory? Tell of Wayne county as a part of Indiana territory. What early appropriations of lands for educational purposes were made in northwest territory? When did Michigan become a territory, what were her boundaries, and where her capital? Who were Michigan territory's first officials and what can you say concerning them? What was the first work of the new officials? What disaster had happened at Detroit? Describe the plan of the new Detroit? What measures did Congress pass for her relief? In what condition were farm lands at this time and how was this remedied? What Indian tribes granted lands to the government in 1796 and state the extent of these lands? What can you say of the first schools? Who was Father Gabriel Richard, and what of his work? How did the English influence American interests in the territory at this time? Who were Tecumseh and The Prophet, and how did they view the existing conditions of their people? What remedies did they plan for improving these conditions? Of what significance was the battle of Tippecanoe? When, where, and by whom was it fought? What conditions in Michigan made war at this time undesirable? How did Congress regard Canada? What military provision was made for the protection of Canada? How did a dereliction of the war department cause unnecessary loss? Of what importance was Malden? Locate it on your map. What plans were made for its capture? What delay caused failure? Describe the battle at the River Raisin. What was the fate of Fort St. Joseph? Give an account of Lieut. Col. Miller's encounter with the British and Indians at Monguagon. Why do you think General Hull wrong in surrendering Detroit at this time? What was the national effect of Hull's surrender? Give an account of the loss of Fort Dearborn? What was the result of these losses upon the spirit of the Americans? Who was Col. Henry Proctor? What can you say of his conduct? Describe the encounter of Col. Lewis' and Proctor's forces. What other victories did Proctor gain at this time? Give the chief facts in regard to the "Massacre of the Raisin" which followed. What relief was sent to Winchester? Give an account of the second attempt upon Fort Meigs. Describe the preparation for gaining control of Lake Erie. Why was the control of the lakes very necessary? Describe the encounter of the British and American fleets. Briefly state the events of the War of 1812, which followed in Michigan. Where is Drummond Island? What debt does Michigan owe Kentucky, and why?

## CHAPTER IX.

### TERRITORIAL TUTELAGE.

**The War Left the People of Michigan** in the direst poverty and desolation. There were few homes whose circles had not been broken. The population of the territory had been considerably reduced, both in numbers and means of support, for the troops and Indians had driven off the cattle and requisitioned the harvests until many of the people were reduced almost to starvation. In their extremity they were fortunate in at least one thing.

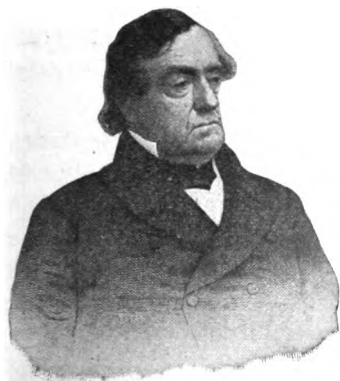
**Lewis Cass** had been made the governor of their territory. He was destined to be its most helpful factor in its hour of need, while his life and influence was felt for good in the later years of prosperity, when she had grown to the dignity of a sovereign state.

**Lewis Cass** was born at Exeter, New Hampshire, October 9, 1782. His parents were of old New England stock. His father had entered the army of the revolution, a private soldier, the day after the battle of Lexington. He left it with the rank of captain, upon its disbandment in 1783.

Lewis was the eldest in a family of five. Until his seventeenth year he received the benefits of the instruction offered by the Exeter Academy, an institution of much prominence. Here many boys who were afterwards men of distinction, were his associates, and among them was Daniel Webster.

Young Cass spent some time as a teacher at Wilmington, Delaware, and later enjoyed short residences at Harper's Ferry and Winchester.

In the meantime, the father, Jonathan Cass, had turned his steps toward the valley of the Ohio, which was proving



LEWIS CASS.

the land of promise to many whom the revolution had left with little more than hope for the future, and consciousness of duties performed.

In 1802, young Lewis became a member of the Marietta bar, he having come to that place with his parents in 1800, and having spent the interim as a student in the office of Governor Meigs. His abilities quickly commanded the attention of his immediate associates, and a rising fame soon spread to distant regions. In 1806, he was made a member of the Ohio legislature. His services here were profitable to his state, and an honor to himself.

Between his service in the state legislature and the opening of the year 1812, Cass had built up a large and lucrative business in his chosen profession. Through connection with cases of much importance, his name had become known to the distant places in his state. When the call came for men to volunteer in the service of their country, he was one of the first to close his office door and offer himself for the service.

This eventually brought him to Michigan, with whose interests he was afterwards to be identified. The close of the war of 1812 was a critical time for Michigan, and no better man than Lewis Cass could have been selected to guide its destiny. He was in the fresh vigor of his young manhood. He was honest and patriotic. He had wisdom and culture, and more than all he knew the people and their lives, and was able to appreciate their adversities and join in their hopes and aspirations. He held their confidence while he lived, and in death he should ever hold our grateful remembrance.

At the time Lewis Cass was made governor, William Woodbridge, also of Marietta, was made secretary. He was likewise a man of strong individuality and of more than ordinary attainments.

**Governor Cass** at once applied himself to the duties at hand. The war was over, but the Indians were still troublesome, and as superintendent of Indian affairs, he met them in council and effected treaties both of amity and cession. When these failed to secure peace and safety to the exposed inhabitants, vigorous measures were employed that brought the desired end.

The immediate necessities of the people were, in a measure, relieved, and every obstacle removed that stood in the way of the people's working out their own prosperity.

**Early Surveyors** sent to survey bounty lands in 1812,

had given the state an evil reputation by reporting that they had gone fifty miles north from the Ohio and Indiana line into Michigan, and had found it a succession of tamarack swamps and sand barrens unfit for cultivation.

Governor Cass did much to correct the erroneous impression that created. The national government was induced to begin the survey of lands to which Indian title had been extinguished in 1816. The survey was anticipated by a year in the creation of Wayne county to meet the changed boundaries of the territory. **Wayne County** It was organized by proclamation of Governor Cass November 21, 1815, and included all the land in the territory to which Indian claim had been extinguished.

**John Jacob Astor**, in 1815, consummated what he had attempted before the war, the re-establishment of the American Fur Company, with himself as president and principal shareholder. Mr. Astor secured favorable legislation from congress forbidding foreigners to engage in the fur business within the United States.

For many years Mackinac Island was the principal station of the company. From here the traders went with their supplies, and annually returned with the peltries gathered from regions as far distant as the northern reaches of the Missouri River. At the annual gatherings in July, fully four hundred clerks and traders with two thousand French Canadian voyageurs and as many Indians, would gather on the island and spend a day in primitive jollity and riotous disorder. Peace brought other evidences of progress.

Before the close of 1815, the Rev. Joseph Hickox, a Methodist clergyman, was in Detroit preaching every three weeks to a class of seven, that had been gathered into a society as early as 1809. A year later the Rev. John Monteith, who

was later to be identified with the early educational efforts of the state, was delivering weekly discourses of a marked Calvinistic bias.

**Indiana Was Admitted** as a state in 1816. Her northern boundary, instead of being fixed at the Ordinance line, which it will be remembered was an east and west line through the southerly extreme of Lake Michigan, was placed ten miles north of that line.

This action was contrary to the Ordinance, and against the rights of Michigan. That portion of Michigan was without inhabitants at the time. The state was without a newspaper or voice in congress, so the incident created but little interest.

**The Need of a Newspaper** was keenly felt in the territory, especially by its business and official interests. It was through the influence and under the patronage of Governor Cass that two young men, John C. Sheldon and Ebenezer Reed, were induced to take up the publication of the DETROIT GAZETTE, a democratic paper.

This paper made its appearance in 1817, and marked the beginning of uninterrupted newspaper publications within the territory.

It was in this same year that Augustus Woodward, still chief justice of the supreme court, drew up and had enacted his scheme for a Catholepistemiad or University of Michigan. It may be said to be the legal predecessor of the present University. The pedantry of the act was the occasion of much ridicule, and subsequent enactments supplanted it with a less pretentious but more effective act.

A modest building was soon provided at Detroit. Rev. John Monteith and Rev. Fr. Gabriel Richard were duly appointed to all the professorships, and they forthwith made

provision for primary schools at Detroit, Frenchtown, and Mackinaw, and an academy and college in Detroit.

**Illinois Became a State** in 1818, and all of the old Northwest Territory north of Indiana and Illinois became a part of the territory of Michigan.

The national survey had now sufficiently progressed to allow the placing of lands upon the market, and they were accordingly put on sale in areas as small as eighty acres.

**The Population of the Territory** was now such as permitted entry upon the second state of territorial existence, as provided for by the Ordinance. There was still a large French element in the population to whom the rights of **Representation in Congress** popular sovereignty had little meaning, and the proposition, when submitted to a popular vote, was given a decisive defeat. Congressional action, in 1819, had given to Michigan the right to elect a territorial delegate.

**The First Elective Officer** of the territory, William Woodbridge, territorial secretary, was the first to be honored by election. The incidents of progress were now coming with rapid stride.

The year 1819 witnessed the organization of the bank of Michigan at Detroit, an institution which for many years played an important part in the financial affairs of the community.

The same year the Walk-in-the-water, the first steamship of the lakes, made a round trip from Buffalo to Mackinaw. **Steamship on the Lakes** It had made the port of Detroit the year previous. From this date, this boat and its successor continued a means of easy transit from Buffalo to Detroit.

While these things so helpful to the development of Michigan were transpiring, Governor Cass met the Indians in a



great council at Saginaw, and negotiated what is generally known as the Cass Treaty.

By this treaty the Indians relinquished to the United States the lands from the vicinity of Kalamazoo to the head of Thunder Bay River. By 1820, the counties of Wayne, Monroe, Mackinac, Macomb, and Oakland had been organized, and in that year a

**System of County Courts** was established, presided over by a chief justice and two associate justices in each county. It was the intermediary court between justices of the peace and the supreme court of the territory. Townships had not yet been created, and local affairs were in the hands of three county commissioners, who, with the county officers, were appointed by the governor.

At the close of the war, the territory was practically without roads. Their necessity from a military standpoint was brought before congress by the governor and his secretary with so good effect, that that body authorized the construction of a road connecting Detroit and Sandusky, and a second road connecting Detroit and Chicago.

By 1820, the latter had been completed in primitive fashion to ten miles beyond Monroe, while at about the same time a post road had been extended from Detroit to Mt. Clemens and Pontiac.

**The Census Now Disclosed** that, notwithstanding the reduction caused by the war, Michigan now had a population of 8,765, nearly twice what it was in 1810, a greater growth than she had made during the century preceding.

That the territory and the country might profit by a more acute knowledge of the lake country, Governor Cass, in

1820, projected an expedition to explore the country through the upper lakes to the head of the Mississippi.

The expedition consisted of the governor, a corps of scientific men, and a company of thirty soldiers, and left Detroit on the 24th of May. Their transports were the bark canoes used in the fur trade, crafts well adapted for exploration. They reached Mackinaw in safety, and providing an extra escort, they pushed on to the Sault, where they arrived June 14th.

**A Small Cluster of Buildings** and a half dozen French and English families constituted the village of Sault Ste. Marie. The pretentious establishments of the Northwestern Fur Company, on the Canadian shore, was the predominant influence in the region. One of the purposes of the expedition was to establish a new fort in the place of the French, long since fallen into decay.

To agree upon the boundaries of the old cession, and to promote, if possible, friendly relations, Governor Cass called a council at his tent for the 16th. It was attended by an Indian concourse, one of the chiefs in the uniform of a British general.

**The Governor Explained** his purpose only to find that his advances were met with every evidence of savage displeasure. After vainly seeking their friendly co-operation, he informed them that the fort would be built whether they agreed to it or not. The council broke up in some disorder.

One of the chiefs, with menacing gestures, planted his war lance in the ground and contemptuously kicked away the presents which had been placed before him.

The Indians withdrew to their own encampment, and soon the British flag was seen flying before one of its principal

**Gov. Cass'** wigwams. Governor Cass, unattended, save by **Policy with** his interpreter, walked over to the encampment, **Indians** took down the offending flag, and carried it away with him. He informed the astonished chief that none but the American flag must be raised upon our soil, and that should they again presume so to do, the United States would put a strong foot upon their necks.

**They Were Unprepared** for such boldness, and seemed hardly to know what to do. They soon sent away their women and children as though meditating an attack, but the sight of sixty-six armed, resolute men, and the counsels of a head chief who had not taken part in the deliberations, had a quieting effect.

Before the close of the same day, the Indians again assembled and signed a treaty remarking the old cession of sixteen square miles. Leaving Sault Ste. Marie, the expedition coasted the south shore of Lake Superior, followed streams, and crossed portages to the Mississippi.

They ascended the Mississippi and tributary streams, and then descended the Mississippi, going to Green Bay by the **Journeyings** Wisconsin and Fox rivers. Here the party **through** separated. A portion returned homeward by **Wisconsin** the way of Mackinaw, while Governor Cass and his party proceeded to Chicago and Detroit through the forests of southern Michigan.

The remainder of his party coasted northward along the eastern shore of Lake Michigan. The results of their expedition were of great value to the territory.

**The Governor** seemed to be ever busy. The next year, 1821, among many other duties, we find him at Chicago negotiating a treaty with the Pottawattamies and other Indians whereby they ceded to the United States all the lands

in southwestern Michigan, except that part southwest of the St. Joseph River.

It was in this section, a short distance above the present city of Niles, that Isaac McCoy, a Kentucky clergyman, in 1822, founded the Carey mission. For several years it was an institution of commanding importance in southwestern Michigan. It was more than a mission where religious instructions were imparted.

**A Commencement in Southwestern Michigan**

**It Was a School** where large numbers of Indian youths were instructed, not alone in the lore of books, but in the practical things of shop and farm. Here, in 1830, the Pottawattamies met Governor Cass, and joined in the treaty by which they relinquished their last claim to the land of their fathers.

In 1821, St. Clair county was organized. The next year Lapeer, Lenawee, Saginaw, Sanilac, Shiawassee, and Wash-  
**Twelve New Counties** tenaw were laid out, making in all twelve counties within the territory. Detroit had received a considerable increase in population, but it was still little more than a crude village.

For many years the clumsy, two-wheeled French carts in summer, and the carioles in winter, were the only vehicles seen upon the streets. Sundays were given over to boisterous sports as well as to serious meditations.

The old whipping post in the market place, imprisonment for debt, and selling the poor to the highest bidder, were  
**Old French Customs** survivors of an older and still cruder time, soon, however, to pass away.

**Territorial Government** was revolutionized by congressional action in 1823. It provided for a legislative body in the territorial council of nine, to be appointed by the presi-

dent and confirmed by the senate from a list of eighteen elected by the people. It changed the tenure of judicial office in the supreme court from life to four years.

Three judges still constituted the supreme court. One effect of the act was that Judge Woodward was dropped **A System of Courts** from the number. County courts were still retained, and the judges of the supreme court were authorized to hold court in given circuits.

The places of holding court were Detroit, Monroe, Mt. Clemens, and St. Clair.

Previously, in the same year, congress had provided for a district court of ample jurisdiction for Brown county, which embraced a large extent of country west of Lake Michigan and continuous to Green Bay.

**James Duane Doty**, a man of ability who accompanied Governor Cass upon his tour of exploration, was made judge of this court.

The year 1825 was a very important one for Michigan. It marked the completion of the Erie Canal, connecting Michigan by continuous means of transit with the tide water at New York. The beneficial effect to the territory from this great project was almost immediate.

Before the close of the season, the steamers Superior, Henry Clay, and Pioneer were plying between Buffalo and Detroit, bringing hundreds of home seekers to **Settlements** our shore. These home seekers struck into the adjacent forest, and it was not long before the border counties could boast of many a pioneer.

**Governmental Changes** were likewise taking place. Congress increased the territorial council to thirteen, who, two years later, were chosen direct, instead of being selected by the president, from a list of twenty-six. It authorized

the governor and council to divide the territory into townships, to incorporate them, and to make provision for the election of township officers.

All officers not representative, in township and county, continued to be the appointees of the governor.

**Choice of** continued to be the appointees of the governor.  
**Minor** This provision was rendered almost a nullity by  
**Officers** the governor's appointing the choice of the people, expressed through popular elections.

The next two or three years brought steady progress, but little of historic interest to the territory. In 1826, Governor Cass was again upon the shores of Lake Superior, making treaties with the northern Indians. The government took a renewed interest in roads, and they were pushed towards Fort Gratiot, Saginaw, and the Grand River. The fort at Detroit was abandoned in 1827, and the military reserve became a part of the city.

**Eleven Counties Were Laid Out in 1829.** Most of them like Barry, Berrien, Branch, Calhoun, Eaton, Ingham, and Jackson, commemorate the names of prominent statesmen which the election of President Jackson the fall before brought to notice.

**More** and Jackson, commemorate the names of prominent  
**Counties** statesmen which the election of President  
**Organized** Jackson the fall before brought to notice.

In 1831, Governor Cass, who had for so many years been the true friend and wise counselor of the people of Michigan, was called to be

**Secretary of War** in the cabinet of President Jackson. When he had assumed the governorship, it was of a community having little more than 4,000 people. The most of them were objects of charity, still suffering from every ill incident to war's destruction.

**Gov. Cass** them were objects of charity, still suffering  
**in Jackson's** from every ill incident to war's destruction.  
**Cabinet** When he left it, the census showed a population of 32,538, and the territory was self supporting.

That the president should come to the territory for a member of his cabinet, was flattering to its people, and was a still greater compliment to the man he chose. The people of all shades of political belief reluctantly parted with the governor, whose energy and abilities had for so many years been so freely given to them.

**General John T. Mason** on September 24, 1830, had been appointed secretary of the territory, and upon the retirement of Governor Cass the year following, became the acting governor.

General Mason, although at the time of his appointment **Successor** a resident of Kentucky, was of the famous **to Gov. Cass** Mason family of Virginia, his father having been the first United States senator from that state.

Mason was a man of broad culture and thorough training. Had he been able to devote his abilities to the duties of his office, his record would undoubtedly have been honorable to himself and profitable to the territory, but failing fortune and business interests required his personal attention, and he was obliged to resign, preparatory to a trip to Mexico.

It was urged, with some basis in reason, that the successor should be chosen from among the inhabitants of the territory. It now contained many men eminently qualified to bear the honor, and discharge the duties of any office incident to their government. These reasons, which find a **Political** basis in the very principles of self-government, **Parties** were supplemented by others that were, if anything, more potent. Political and personal feeling had recently assumed a bitterness theretofore unknown.

**The Anti-Masonic Party**, one of those ephemeral

growths of our political history, had recently taken hold in the new communities. Its partisans at the previous election had elected several members of the territorial council.



STEVEN T. MASON, THE BOY GOVERNOR.

When the news reached Detroit, in the early days of 1831, that President Jackson had given the appointment to **Stevens T. Mason**, the minor son of the retiring secretary, the joint causes produced a protest of more than usual volume. A public meeting was called and a remonstrance circulated that was quite generally signed. The activity of the whig and anti-Masonic factions soon dampened the ardor of the Jackson men, and their opposition was soon turned to friendly assistance.

The young man, in an address to the public, in temperate and conciliatory terms, showed himself to be no ordinary boy. While some kept up the contest, the majority, with the spirit born of a new country, were seemingly in favor of "giving the boy a chance."

Although opposition was carried to the senate, the appointment was nevertheless confirmed in July, 1831.

**Stevens Thomson Mason**, the "Boy Governor," or Tom Mason, as he was familiarly called, was one of the most beloved, forceful, and interesting characters of our early history.

He was born at Leesburg, Loudoun county, Virginia, on the 27th of October, 1811, and so had not yet arrived at his twentieth year when he was made secretary of the territory. In 1815, his father,



who had inherited what was considered an ample fortune for that day, removed to Lexington, Kentucky.

The boy had every advantage of a cultured home. For many generations his ancestors had been the leaders of a society both cultured and refined. It was while the family resided in Lexington that the young lad first met General Jackson in the suite of President Monroe, while the party stayed for a time in the Mason home. This may, in some measure, account for his loyalty to the young man in later years. When young Mason had outgrown his private tutor, he became, and was for several years, a student in Transylvania University.

Heavy losses to the father from having become surety for others, ended his school days. The family removed to Mt. Sterling, where the father could give his personal attention to some investments at that place. Here the young man, Stevens T. Mason, became a clerk in a village store, and was so engaged when the father accepted the appointment which brought him to Detroit.

The feeling with which the young man's appointment was received was, in some measure, intensified by the fact that the office of governor was vacant, and as secretary he was the acting governor. This condition was soon remedied by

**Stevens T. Mason Act-** the appointment of George B. Porter of Lancaster, Pennsylvania. Being a lawyer of considerable practice, it was some time before he  
**ing Govern-**  
**nor**

was able to give his personal attention to the duties of his office, and in the meantime young Mason was the executive head of the territory.

#### REVIEW.

Tell of the life and character of Lewis Cass. Why did Michigan need a governor of strong personality? When was Cass made territorial governor? What were some of the affairs which at once claimed his attention? What was the condition of the fur trade in the territory in 1815? Who was Rev. Joseph Hickox, Rev. John Monteith? What change in Michigan's southern boundary caused trouble at a later date? Why was little attention attracted at the time? Give the name of the first Michigan newspaper? When, where, and by whom was it published? What educational provisions were made in 1817? Who was our first territorial delegate? When and where was our first bank established? Compare shipping on the great lakes in 1818 with that of 1906. What was the Cass treaty? Of what importance was the establishment of post roads? Compare Michigan's population in 1820 with that at the close of the War of 1812. What expedition of Gov. Cass gave a new idea of the territory? Give the results of his exploits and councils with the Indians. Of what aid was the treaty made by Gov. Cass with the Pottawattamies? What and where was the Carey Mission? State the changes in the territorial government made in 1823. Why was 1825 an important year for Michigan? What changes in government were made in 1825? When and why did Cass' administration close? Tell of some of the changes wrought during his regime. What can you say of Cass' successor? When was Stevens T. Mason appointed territorial secretary? How was the news received? Sketch the life of young Mason prior to his appointment.

## CHAPTER X.

## THE PASSING OF THE TERRITORY.

**Every Month Was Now Adding** to the population of Michigan. Steamships had multiplied, some six or seven now plied the lake between Detroit and Buffalo. They were daily bringing the material for the peopling of a state.

The pioneers were mostly of hardy New England stock, those from Vermont, New Hampshire, and New York predominating. Among them was an unusually large proportion of men who had had the advantages of liberal education and broad culture. They were destined to be of incalculable benefit to the coming state.

They laid the foundations of its institutions on broad and comprehensive lines, and established high standards of civic virtue. Nor were these men to be found only in Detroit.

**The Pioneers** were striking deeper and deeper into the forest. Villages were springing up in every favored section of the southern border. In every hamlet, and at many a "clearing" could be found men and women whose attainments would have been equal to the demands of our oldest and most populous communities. Common hardships and privations tended to broad democratic simplicity and sympathies, even if they did not tend to unity of political views.

By 1831 the Free Press, Courier, and Journal of Detroit; **News-papers** the Western Emigrant of Ann Arbor; the Oakland Chronicle of Pontiac, and the Michigan Inquirer of Monroe, were weekly serving their readers with well filled columns of foreign and domestic news.

They gave attention to matters of state and national policy quite out of proportion to their space in the modern newspaper. The principles of the Democratic-Republican, the Whig, and Anti-Masonic parties, each had their advocates, and space was given to the quarrels of factions and individuals with a liberality now, fortunately, unknown.



THE OLD SPINNING WHEEL.

**Events Were Now Impending** that were destined to try the fortitude of the young man whom circumstances had placed in executive charge of Michigan. The **Black Hawk's War** early spring of 1832 brought disquieting rumors to the effect that Black Hawk, a famous Sac warrior, who, according to treaty, had removed from the

vicinity of Rock River, Illinois, across the Mississippi, had again returned with a band several hundred strong, with indications of hostility.

There was great excitement among the settlements of northern Illinois and southern Wisconsin, which then formed a part of Michigan Territory, and throughout the southwestern portion of our present state, where large numbers of Pottawattamies and Winnebagos either still lived, or were within easy striking distance.

**Developments Soon Showed** that Black Hawk's intentions were anything but peaceful. The state of Illinois dispatched a considerable force against the Indians, Colonel Henry Dodge, with a body of Michigan volunteers, proceeded to hold in check the Winnebagos in the southern portion of the present state of Wisconsin, and the general government hurried regulars to the scene. In August, the last battle was fought, which resulted in the rout of the Indians, and the capture of Black Hawk.

Detachments of Michigan militia and volunteers under General John R. Williams, Captain Marsac, and General Joseph W. Brown reached points from Saline to Chicago.

Their return was ordered, it being apparent that their services were not needed. Michigan soldiers thus saw little of the actual hostilities. They were destined to face what was far worse. With the breaking out of the war

**Asiatic Cholera** was known to be at the seaboard. It had made its appearance at Quebec and Montreal. President Jackson had become impatient at the conduct of affairs at the seat of trouble, and late in June, Colonel Scott was dispatched with troops for the frontier.

Four steamboats started with the command from Buffalo to Fort Dearborn. Lake Erie was passed without mishap; but while one of the vessels was moored at the dock in De-

troit two cases of cholera developed among the troops that resulted fatally before the ship could get under way.

By the time they had reached Fort Gratiot, fifty miles distant, it was found necessary to land five companies of 280 men. Many had been stricken before landing, others were **Ravages of the Cholera** stricken immediately after. Many, panic stricken, fled into the surrounding forest and died alone amid its solemn shade. It is recorded that of the 280, but nine survived.

**At Detroit the Pestilence** spread with frightful ravage. It spread to claim victims in the pioneer settlement at Marshall, and other places. At Ypsilanti and Ann Arbor, armed guards patrolled the highway, and even shot the stage horses to prevent the passage of travelers from the infected district.

Here Governor Mason was placed under arrest, as at night he passed along the old Chicago turnpike in the discharge of his duties. For weeks Detroit witnessed a veritable reign of terror.

Many died. Among the victims was the Rev. Gabriel Richard, who for many weeks before his death had been **Death of Father Richard** everywhere present, giving material aid and spiritual consolation to the people. But with the coming fall the community was freed from the ravages of the scourge, and the following spring affairs assumed their usual tenor.

**People Again Took an Interest** in civic and social affairs. A company of actors opened a theatre at Detroit, and gave nightly entertainments.

Black Hawk, under military escort returning from the east, where he had been conducted to see the power of the government, stopped at Detroit, and was for a few days the object of interest and the topic of conversation.

In the year 1833, the legislative council made a change in the judicial system by creating a circuit court for that portion of Michigan territory east of the lake, and outside of the present limits of Wayne county. To the judgeship of this circuit

**William A. Fletcher of Detroit** was appointed.

This circuit embraced the counties of Monroe, Lenawee, St. Joseph, Cass, Berrien, Kalamazoo, Calhoun, Jackson, Washtenaw, Oakland, St. Clair, and Macomb. Two side judges in each county lent their dignity to the court, and **Three Judges** were a quorum for the transaction of certain business. No person charged with an offense above the degree of a misdemeanor could be asked to stand trial in the absence of the circuit judge.

To be in the circuit, Judge Fletcher took up his residence at Ann Arbor. For riding this extensive circuit, holding court in pioneer school houses, and occasionally sending the jury to deliberate under the shade of a tree, Judge Fletcher received the salary of \$1,000 per year.

**The Supreme Court of the Territory** continued to exist as such, and its functions as a circuit court were likewise retained and exercised under the name of superior circuit court.

On the 28th of June, 1834, congress attached all of the territory west of the Mississippi River, and north and east of the Missouri and White-Earth rivers to the territory of Michigan. The questions of a state government were now forcing themselves upon the people of the territory, and becoming the topic of public discussion. It was generally conceded that, before the close of the year, active measures would be taken toward that end.

While the public mind was so occupied, the people were

again disturbed by a second visitation of the cholera. It claimed Governor Porter as one of its victims, and the mortality in a single month was one-seventh of the population.

The death of Governor Porter was a great loss to the territory. He had been but a short time among its people, but had given many evidences of his sterling qualities.

**The Territory Was Approaching** conditions where his conservative counsel would have been of great value. The place of governor was never filled, although Henry D. Gilpin was nominated, but not confirmed for the position.

Until a complication with Ohio called for the intervention of the President, Stevens T. Mason continued the acting governor of the territory.

The territorial council, at its session in September, 1834, **The County** set off the territory that had recently been **of Iowa** attached to Michigan into the counties of Dubuque and Des Moines, and placed them in a circuit with the previously formed county of Iowa.

**A Census Now Showed** that the original territory of Michigan had a population of 87,273 inhabitants, nearly thirty thousand more than required by the ordinance for the establishment of a state government. The territory west of the lake had likewise received a considerable immigration, and now possessed sufficient population to entitle it to an independent territorial government. Accordingly, in December, the territorial council memorialized congress to establish a

**Territorial Government for Wisconsin.** This was not done until July 4, 1836. On January 26, 1835, legislative action was taken looking to the formation of a constitution and the organization of a state government.

It will be recalled that the east and west Ordinance line, as fixed in the event of congress' adopting the five state plan for the northwest, was to be an east and west line drawn

through the southerly bend, or extreme, of Lake Michigan. This line was fixed as the southerly boundary of the territory when it was created in 1805. In 1802, when the state of Ohio was admitted, her authorities were seemingly suspicious that such a line as a northern boundary would not give the state all the harbor facilities on Lake Erie that she desired.

In Ohio's constitution a proviso was, therefore, inserted to the effect that, in case the Ordinance line should be found **Northern Boundary of Ohio** to intersect Lake Erie east of the mouth of the Maumee river, with the consent of congress, the boundary should be a straight line running from the southerly extreme of Lake Michigan to the most northerly cape of Maumee bay. To this proposed change congress had never given its consent.

**The Ordinance Provided** that the line should not be changed except by common consent. To such consent the people of Michigan had never been a party. Congress had practically refused consent by creating Michigan territory with its southern boundary in opposition to the Ohio provision.

In 1817, the northern line as desired by Ohio was run and a year later the Ordinance line was marked. These lines bore the names of their respective surveyors. The line claimed by Ohio was known as the Harris Line. The Ordinance Line was called the Fulton Line.

**The Disputed Territory**, therefore, was a strip of land from Indiana to Lake Erie, five miles wide at the west and eight miles wide at the east, the strip containing 468 square miles. For thirty years it had been under the jurisdiction of the territory of Michigan.

In 1822, the counties of Monroe and Lenawee had their southern limits set at the Fulton Line. In 1827, the town-



ship of Port Lawrence, including all the disputed territory, was created in the county of Monroe.

**The Legislative Authorities** of Michigan had constructed roads within the district. In 1833, they granted the franchise for a road terminating at Port Lawrence (now Toledo), and the authority of Michigan officials had never been questioned.

Ohio was now engaged upon works of internal improvement. The mouth of the Maumee was the logical terminus of the Erie and Miami Canal, and the authorities of Ohio desired that it be within their state.

The action of the people of Michigan preparatory to holding a constitutional convention aroused the Ohio legislature. In February, in pursuance of a message from Governor Lucas of that state, they passed a series of acts seeking to extend the jurisdiction of Ohio over the land in question.

Upon the receipt of the information at Detroit, the legislative council, by advice of Governor Mason, enacted a law whereby it was made highly penal for any person to accept or exercise public office within the territory, except through the authorities of the United States or Michigan.

On Saturday, April 4, 1835, the electors of the territory chose delegates to a constitutional convention which met at Detroit on the second Monday in May. The action of the authorities of Ohio was creating much hostile feeling. It was very apparent that the people of Michigan would not consent to the extension of Ohio's limits without a contest. That a few thousand people of a territory, with a

**Governor Just Out of His Teens**, should presume to question the right of a great state with a "million of free-men," as her governor put it in a proclamation, seemed very galling to Ohio statesmen.

Governor Mason had referred the matter to the President, and had obtained the opinion of the Attorney General of the United States sustaining Michigan's position.

**General Joseph W. Brown**, commanding the territorial **The Toledo** militia, had been ordered by the Governor to **War** be ready to resent Ohio's threatened assumption of jurisdiction.

The territorial council made an appropriation to maintain the supremacy of the laws of the territory, and the Ohio legislature appropriated \$300,000.00 to back Governor Lucas.

**Commissioners Were Appointed by Ohio** to re-mark the "Harris Line." This they attempted to do, but were interrupted by the sheriff of Lenawee county with an armed force. Some were placed under arrest, and some escaped to Perrysburg, a volley from the Wolverine muskets accelerating the speed with which the latter departed. The matter soon became very troublesome for President Jackson.

**A Presidential Election** was approaching. Michigan was a territory without voice in the contest. Her position was fortified by the highest legal authority of the nation, but Ohio was a powerful state.

**Indiana and Illinois** were both interested, for they themselves had already done what Ohio was attempting. For a time the President favored Governor Mason, but the temptation to yield to power rather than to duty eventually prevailed.

The President appointed Richard Rush of Philadelphia, and Benjamin C. Howard of Baltimore, two eminent gentlemen, as commissioners to proceed to the seat of trouble and effect some kind of an adjustment.

**Commissioners Appointed by the President** Toledo was the object of contention, and it-

was undividable. Messrs. Rush and Howard sought to bring about a concurrent jurisdiction of the state of Ohio and the territory of Michigan, allowing the people of the disputed district to resort to either, as they saw fit, until the whole matter could be referred to congress.

As Michigan was already exercising the whole jurisdiction, Governor Mason emphatically refused to share it with Ohio, and the efforts of the commissioners came to naught.

No considerable difficulties marked the summer. As September approached the authorities of Ohio seemingly believed that their cause would be benefited by some act of jurisdiction within the disputed territory.

**The Ohio Legislature**, at its last special session, having gone through the formalities of organizing it into the county of Lucas, it was proposed to hold a session of court at Toledo, to show to the world that the county in fact existed.

**Troops Were Levied** to protect the court, and to uphold the jurisdiction of Ohio. Governor Mason, who, with the people of Michigan, was intensely in earnest, ordered out the Michigan forces. Under General Joseph W. Brown, **A Blood-** about 1,000 strong they proceeded to Toledo, **less War** accompanied by Governor Mason. The Ohio forces did not come beyond Perrysburg.

If the court was held, the disorder with which the magistrate and officials sought safety on the south of the "Fulton Line" when it was rumored that the Michigan boys were approaching, must have deprived the incident of most of its value as a precedent. •

The Michigan troops stayed but a few days upon the border, when they were disbanded and took themselves to their various homes.

**The "Toledo War"** was not without its amusing incidents. It formed the basis of many songs and stories, and

now, when time has removed the bitterness, they are about all that remain of the affair.

At the time, it was the occasion of intense feeling throughout the territory. It was while Michigan troops were at Toledo that Governor Mason received the intelligence that he had been removed from office, and that the president had appointed

**John Horner of Virginia** in his place. The position was first offered to Charles Shaler of Pennsylvania, who declined.

Governor Mason's course had been very popular with the people. Indeed, a governor or a community with any pride or spirit could not have acted differently.

The reception accorded Mr. Horner by the people of Michigan was anything but cordial. His manner was far from conciliatory. He proceeded to pardon all **Gov.** persons under arrest for violating the jurisdiction of the territory, and gave the people the **Mason's** impression that his only purpose in Michigan was to promote Ohio's cause. **Successor**

It was his misfortune not to understand the situation or the temper of the people. It was likewise a matter of regret that the people, in turn, lost few opportunities to show their disrespect.

At Ypsilanti, one night, they stoned his lodging place. Fortunately, this incident was exceptional. The less belligerent invented songs and jokes at the expense of the new governor that were quite as effective agents of disrespect as sticks and stones.

In October, 1835, the constitution which the convention of the preceding May had formulated, was formally adopted by a vote of the people.

For a time John Horner remained at Detroit, under

instructions from the President, refusing to recognize the **Michigan** new government. He insisted upon his official **Becomes** rights and privileges as secretary of the terri- **a State** tory, but his services were neither sought nor his orders obeyed. With the setting up of the territorial government in Wisconsin, Horner went to that portion of the country.

It is due him to say that in his new field he displayed talents and abilities that were to the advantage of the people whom he served. To the end of a long life, he was one of the honored and respected citizens of Wisconsin.

**As a State Charter** the great jurist, Judge James V. Campbell, has paid it the high compliment of his approval as being much better suited to the changing necessities of the state than the one by which it was superseded fifteen years later.

The same election that ratified the constitution elected Stevens T. Mason governor, Edward Mundy of Ann Arbor **First State** lieutenant governor, and Isaac E. Crary of Mar- **Officers** shall, representative in congress. A legislature **and U. S.** was chosen which convened in November. **Senators**

Among their first acts was the election of Lucius Lyon of Grand Rapids and John Norvel of Detroit as senators. Some legislation was enacted, but the organization of courts was postponed until July, 1836.

The legislature then adjourned to January 1, 1836, believing that, by that time, the necessary enabling act admitting the state would be passed by congress. At the opening of the congressional session our national representatives appeared, hoping to be admitted to their seats. The question of admission became the subject of violent opposition.

**The Admission of the State** without qualification would

have left the question of the southern boundary to the decision of the United States supreme court.

This Michigan desired, but Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois did not. The Ohio delegation protested, no doubt, with some effect. The slavery question, the admission of Arkansas, was the more potent factor in the congressional controversy. At last the acts for the admission of both states were passed, and both received executive approval on the 15th of June, 1836. The act for the admission of Arkansas was unconditional. In the case of Michigan, an ingenious plan was devised, not only for the admission of the state, but fixing the Harris Line as the northern boundary of Ohio.

**Michigan Was to Be Admitted** when, through a popular convention duly chosen, she accepted the southern boundary as claimed by Ohio and Indiana.

Shortly before the passage of the bill, upon the suggestion of a senator of South Carolina, the upper peninsula, seemingly as compensation for the loss of territory to Ohio, was included as a part of the new state. The act expressly recognized our state existence and the validity of the election of our two senators and representatives, but as a state out of the Union, and provided that it should stay out until the conditions imposed were accepted.

In the meantime, Michigan had organized her judicial system which went into effect July 1. Congress had made provision for a district court, district attorney, and marshal. The president had named, and the senate confirmed the incumbent, but this act was not to take effect until Michigan gave her assent to the act of admission.

This action of congress aroused great popular feeling throughout the state. Governor Mason convened the legislature in extra session in July. It made provision for the

calling of a convention to pass upon the question of assent to the conditions imposed by congress.

Delegates were duly chosen, and met at Ann Arbor on September 4. It has always been known as "The First Convention of Assent." By a vote of twenty-eight to twenty-one assent was refused. Addresses to the president and the people of the state of Michigan were adopted, defending the position which they had taken.

**Thus Far Politics Had Exerted** little, if any, influence in the boundary question. The people of Michigan had acted quite unanimously.

The holding of the Wayne county Democratic convention, preceding the general election of 1836, and the adoption of resolutions by that body urging the calling of a second convention to consider the question of assent, gave the question its first political coloring.

The convention adopted a resolution setting forth some evils feared from remaining out of the Union, and recommended that the other counties of the state call meetings to give like expression and petition the governor to issue a proclamation, recommending the election of delegates to a second convention of assent.

Washtenaw county and other counties called like meetings and transmitted their views to the governor. Many reasons were urged why Michigan should accept the conditions.

It was urged that unless her assent was given before January 1, ensuing, that the state would lose its proportionate share of the distribution of the proceeds from the sale of public lands; that the slave power would have a preponderating influence in the United States senate; that the state was retarding its own development. On the other

**Anxiety to  
Become  
a Part of  
the Union**

hand, by acceding to the terms imposed, large grants of public lands might be secured from the general government whereby its progress and prosperity could be greatly fostered.

The hopelessness of the contest was beginning to dawn upon the people. Last of all, a congressman, two senators, and several federal appointees were anxious to come into the honors of their several offices.

The state was without legal machinery wherewith to proceed. Laws had been enacted for a convention. It had met, discharged its functions, and adjourned. There was no law for another.

**To Meet the Situation**, the governor in a public communication gave direction to the idea of the people's proceeding in their "*original capacity*." A Wayne county committee issued a circular requesting the electors of the various townships to meet on the 5th and 6th days of December to choose delegates to a second convention to meet at Ann Arbor on December 14. The elections were held, and on the date specified the famous

**"Frost-bitten Convention,"** as it has ever been called, assembled at Ann Arbor. Many townships held no elections, but eighteen out of the then twenty-two counties were represented. On December 15th the convention adjourned, having passed the required resolution assenting to the condition imposed by congress.

The assent was the occasion of much political agitation. The Whigs sought for advantage in the inglorious back-down of the young governor, whose action the democrats as vigorously defended.

**Congress Seemed as Anxious** as were the people of Michigan to be rid of the question, and finally accepted it



as a sufficient compliance, and passed the bill for the admission of the state. This bill became a law on the 26th of January, 1837. When admitted, the state was recognized as having existed since November, 1835.

**Thus Michigan Became the Twenty-sixth State** in the Federal Union. For more than a century and a half, civilization had struggled on our soil. Here considerable communities were flourishing before the valley of the Ohio could boast a white man's habitation; but of all the vast territory of the northwest, Michigan was the last, excepting Wisconsin, to be admitted to statehood.

A hundred thousand people were now within her borders. They were young, vigorous, and energetic. They had come from the east to carve out homes, and build a state in the wonderful west. They never undervalued their responsibility nor doubted their ability, but went forward with an unquestioning confidence.

#### REVIEW.

Of what stock and character were the pioneers of Michigan? How were the settlers supplied with news? When and where was Black Hawk's war? What was Michigan's part? Describe the ravages of the scourge which swept Michigan in 1832. What changes in the judicial system were made in 1833? Compare Judge Fletcher's work and salary with that of a circuit judge at the present time. What was the superior circuit court? Bound Michigan as it existed in July, 1834? State some of the topics which her people were discussing. Who was Porter, Gilpin? Who was acting governor? When was the census taken? How is provision made for it? What did this census show of Michigan? How had Congress established the southern boundary of our territory? Why was there dissatisfaction over this? Where was the Harris Line? Why had Michigan superior claims to the disputed territory, and upon what were they based? Give an account of the legislative war over the boundary. How did Governor Mason aid Michigan's cause? Why was the boundary question troublesome to the president? Who was the president? How did he seek to effect an adjustment? What resulted? Where was Lucas county, Ohio? Why was a court established at Toledo? How did Michigan regard the establishment? What was this boundary war called? Who was John Horner and why was he unpopular in Michigan? How was he treated? When was the first constitution of Michigan adopted? Name as many as you can of Michigan's first state officials. Who were the first U. S. senators chosen, and how and when were they elected? Why was the admission of Michigan as a state opposed by Congress? What were the final terms upon which Michigan was admitted? How did some of Congress' action affect popular feeling in the state? Give an account of the "First Convention of Assent" and its work. Give some reasons advanced why Michigan should accept the conditions imposed by Congress? Give an account of the calling and meeting of the "Frost Bitten Convention." In what ways had Michigan been an important factor in the great northwest?

## CHAPTER XI.

### STATEHOOD AND ITS TRIALS.

**The Constitution Adopted** was, in many ways, well suited to meet the requirements of a growing community. It embraced a comprehensive bill of rights; simple but ample provisions were made for the legislature, executive, and judicial branches of the state government.

This constitution enjoined upon the legislature the organization of the militia, the creation of a system of common schools, and the duty of providing for internal improvements. It safeguarded the funds set apart for the support of the university and primary schools, providing that the interest only should be applicable to such uses. Few limitations were placed upon the power of the legislature. That body was left quite free from such restraining provisions as were later incorporated into the constitution of 1850.

**The Instrument Reflected the Distrust** which people had for corporations, by providing that the legislature should pass no act of incorporation unless with the assent of at least two-thirds of each house.

The provision fixing the qualifications of an elector as "every white male citizen above the age of twenty-three years, having resided in the state six months next preceding any election," was the occasion of the most opposition to the constitution both in the convention, among the people, and later in congress.

It became something of a party question, the whigs opposing and the democrats supporting the provision. Those

**Whigs and Democrats** which, at the present day, appear the most anamolous were the ones making all state officers and members of the supreme court appointive by the Governor, by and with the consent of the state senate.

The one exception was the office of superintendent of public instruction. This nomination was to be confirmed by the legislature on joint vote.

The act of Congress of June 23, 1836, confirmed to the state section sixteen of each township for the support of the common schools.

It likewise confirmed the grant of seventy-two sections of land for the support of the university, and gave five sections of land to aid in the erection of public buildings. All salt springs within the state, not exceeding twelve with six sections of land adjoining, and five per cent. of the net proceeds of all sales of public lands within the state from and after July 1, 1836, were to be appropriated for roads and canals.

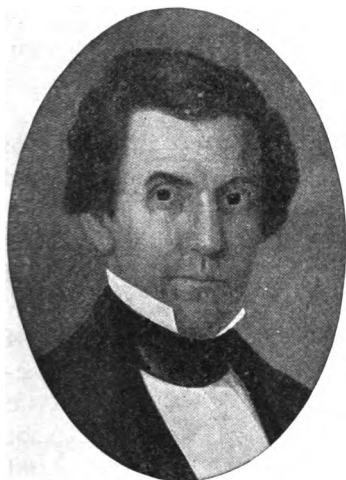
From this grant, Michigan ultimately received about 1,280,000 acres of primary school, 46,080 of salt spring, and 3,200 acres of public building lands.

**Under the Appointment of Governor Mason,** Kintzing Pritchett, a talented young man who had come to Michigan from Pennsylvania with Governor Porter, became secretary of state.

Henry Howard, a leading merchant of Detroit, became state treasurer.

The position of auditor general was conferred upon Robert Abbott of Detroit, who had filled the same position under the territorial government. The appointment of attorney general was given to Daniel Le Roy of Pontiac, a man who was among the first to settle in Oakland county, and whose abilities had brought him many positions of trust and honor.

**State  
Officers  
Appointed  
by Gov.  
Mason**



ISAAC E. CRARY.

The office of superintendent of public instruction was, as subsequent events proved, most fortunately bestowed upon John D. Pierce, a young Congregational clergyman, who a few years before, had taken up his residence at Marshall.

General Isaac E. Crary, who had been elected the member to congress, had been a member of the constitutional convention, and chairman of the committee on education. He had

profited by many suggestions from this cultured and broad minded missionary, and when the position was to be filled, General Crary secured the appointment for him. His great work for Michigan deserves for him more than a passing notice.

**The Law for the Creation** of our judiciary received its approval March 26, 1836. It provided for the establishment of a supreme and circuit courts. The state was divided into three circuits, the first comprising the counties of Wayne, Macomb, St. Clair, Lapeer, Michilimackinac, and Chippewa; the second the counties of Monroe, Lenawee, **The State** Washtenaw, Oakland, Saginaw, Jackson, and **Judiciary** Hillsdale; while the third included the counties of Branch, St. Joseph, Cass, Berrien, Kalamazoo, Allegan, Calhoun, and Kent. (See bottom next page.)

**John Davis Pierce** was born at Chesterfield, New Hampshire, February 18th, 1797. His life was destined to be no royal road.



JOHN D. PIERCE.

When he was two years of age his father died. Eight years later, the grandfather, with whom he lived at Paxton, Massachusetts, also died. Young Pierce learned to know that all comes from penury and toil. For years he knew no schooling other than that furnished by the two months winter terms of neighboring districts. Privation never daunted his courage nor dampened his ardor. In 1813, with savings amounting to \$200, he entered Brown university. He was compelled to replenish his means by teaching each year of his course, but he persevered and graduated in 1822.

By 1824, he had completed his theological studies, and in his twenty-seventh year he entered the ministry. In May, 1831, he became a pioneer missionary at Marshall, where a year later his

wife and loyal co-worker died of cholera.

Pierce thus brought to his work a rare combination of virtues, a well stored mind, real culture and a life of hard experiences. Knowing even a little of his life we can see that it was personal when he wrote, "The blood of the hard-handed laborer is just as royal as that of the king on his throne;" and that he was voicing a long settled conviction when he said, "Primary schools are the main dependence in the attainment of the ideal government of the people, by the people."

**He Was Appointed** on the 26th of July, 1836. He applied himself diligently to his task, and by March 20, 1837, **The Primary School System** he had formulated, the legislature had passed, and the governor had approved a law for the organization and support of primary schools. This was the basis of our primary school system.

**The Supreme Court** was composed of three judges with terms of office of seven years. The members appointed were George Morrell of Detroit to the first circuit,

William A. Fletcher of Ann Arbor to the second, and Ephroditus Ransom of Kalamazoo to the third.

They were all men of more than average learning and ability. One of them, Judge Ransom, later became Governor of the state. Judge Fletcher, by reason of being the first member appointed, became the chief justice.

Each county elected two associate judges, or "side judges," as they were sometimes called. The member of the supreme court for the given circuit rode his circuit, and with the two side judges of the county, constituted the circuit court.

Any two judges were a quorum for the transaction of business, but no person could be asked to stand trial for an offense above the degree of a misdemeanor in the absence of the presiding judge.

The three presiding judges acting as a supreme Court were required to hold three terms annually, one at each of the cities of Detroit, Ann Arbor, and Kalamazoo. Two terms of the circuit court were required to be held yearly in each of the several counties.

**Chancery Jurisdiction** was delegated to a separate chancery court, which was required to hold two terms a year in each of the three circuits. This court was presided over by a separate judge or chancellor. To this important office Governor Mason appointed Elon Farnsworth, or Chancellor Farnsworth as he was thereafter better known.

Mr. Farnsworth was an able jurist, and his career upon this bench shed distinguished honor upon himself and the **A Chancery Court** office. At the memorial services held in his honor on the occasion of his death, it was stated that no decision of his had ever been reversed.

While Michigan was thus fortunately favored in the organization of her institutions, and the selection of officials of

honor and high ideals, there were still existing conditions destined to postpone the full fruition of her dreams and aspirations.

**Michigan Had a Population**, in 1837, of 174,061; twice the number three years previous. The people looked forward with confidence that no distant day would find the state a populous and flourishing commonwealth. It was not strange that they should entertain such views.

They had seen the tide of immigration transform the wilderness of Ohio into fair fields and thriving cities, and **Immigration into Michigan** swell its population from a few hundred to a great state of a million souls. In fewer years, they had seen the same achievements duplicated on the prairies of Indiana and Illinois.

Now that the tide had turned towards Michigan, they believed that, in a brief time, it would equal, if not surpass, the population of its neighbors.

Although our natural resources were comparatively unknown, there were reasons for believing that they would equal, if not surpass in richness, those of any other state of the northwest.

**A Large Proportion of Our Pioneers** had touched the Erie Canal in their passage into Michigan, and had become witnesses of the wonderful development it had wrought in its adjacent regions. National, state, and municipal governments were interesting themselves on a canal system to connect the waters of the Potomac with those of the Ohio.

**Ohio Already Had Projects** under way that involved an expense of many millions of dollars, and Indiana was embarking upon works equally pretentious. It was a time of prosperity, both state and national. Prices were high, and everywhere there was confidence in the continuance of good times.

Human wisdom has never been able to forecast either industrial or commercial development. In 1836, the great possibilities of interstate railways, and the ultimate location of the industrial centers were both unknown.

**Local and State Patriotism**, as distinguished from national patriotism, was developed to a degree now unknown. The people looked to their states, rather than to the national government, as the source of power. Such were some of the conditions which exerted a marked influence upon the first few years of our history.

**One Effect of the Rapidly Increasing Population** was the speculative values it gave to the wild lands just coming upon the market. Eleven counties were organized in the **A Period of** years 1835, 1836, and 1837, and seventy town-**Speculation** ships were organized at the regular session of the legislature of 1837.

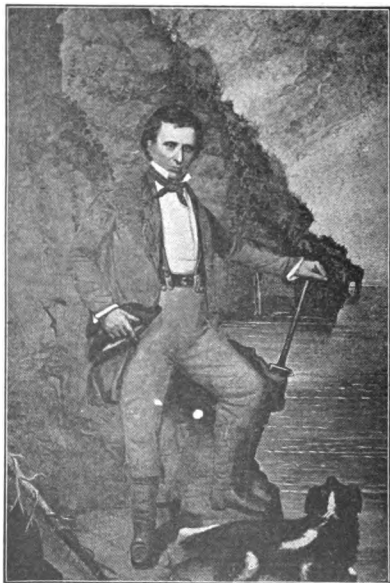
Speculators hurried to the new formed counties, located lands, and proceeded to plat cities and villages with streets, avenues, and public grounds, among which wolves and Indians were the only tenants. There are few sections in the southern portion of the state that did not have their full share of "paper cities."

**The Legislature Met** in January, 1837, and as might be expected, reflected the sentiment of the people. All branches of the government were ambitious to promote the development of the State, and the enactments of the legislature covered a broad and varied field. One of the **Establishment of a Geological Survey** acts provided for the appointment of a state geologist, and appropriated \$29,000 to be expended in sums ranging from \$3,000, in 1837, to \$12,000, in 1840, for the purposes of a geological survey.



**Dr. Douglass Houghton**, a young man of eminent scientific attainments, was appointed state geologist. The name of Douglass Houghton will always stand as that of one of the pre-eminently great men of Michigan. In 1830, in his twenty-first year, at the invitation of Lewis Cass, and others, **The First State Geologist** he came to Detroit to deliver a series of lectures on chemistry and geology. He was already a graduated physician, and had spent one year as a professor of chemistry and natural history in an eastern school.

During his residence at Detroit, he had accompanied Henry Schoolcraft on his expedition to the upper Mississippi. As a practicing physician during the cholera epidemic of 1832 and 1834, he had won lasting gratitude by his example of courage and kindly service.



DOUGLASS HOUGHTON.

He was largely instrumental in the passage of the law creating the department, and so applied his talents that the legislature of 1838 gave him three assistants, one each in zoology, botany, and topography. Twelve thousand dollars a year were appropriated for the survey for the ensuing four

years. His services in discovering and making known Michi-

gan's resources and great possibilities, were of value almost beyond computation. His labors extended to the Lake Superior region, where he was unfortunately drowned October 14, 1845.

His life sized portrait adorns the wall of representative hall in the capitol at Lansing, while his name and memory are perpetuated in the charming city and rich county of the region his genius did so much to develop.

**The Governor's Message, in 1837,** ably seconded the report of Superintendent Pierce favoring a comprehensive system of education, embracing common schools from which every child could pass, by graduations, to the finished courses of a crowning university. The legislature followed the lead of the superintendent and Governor. The university was given legal existence on March 18, 1837, and two days later a law was passed fixing its location at Ann Arbor.\* Its governing body was to be a board of regents **Board of** consisting of the Governor, lieutenant gov-  
**Control of** ernor, chancellor, and judges of the supreme  
**the** court, as ex-officio members; and twelve regents  
**University** appointed by the Governor and senate. Provisions were made for literary, medical, and law departments, although only the first was instituted until after the lapse of several years.

**The Board of Regents** was authorized to erect buildings, when funds should be provided. There were then no high schools nor preparatory schools, so the regents were empowered to establish university branches. In the branches there were to be normal and agricultural courses among those of a preparatory nature. Such branches were subsequently located at Detroit, Pontiac, Tecumseh, Niles, Kalamazoo, Monroe, and White Pigeon. The first class

---

\*NOTE.—The first location of the University was on Bates street, Detroit, between Congress and Larned streets.

entered the university in 1841, facilities at that time having been provided at Ann Arbor.

**The Primary School and University Lands** were, at this time, under the control of the superintendent of public instruction. They remained with this officer until transferred to the state land office, created in 1844.

Such was the beginning of the University of Michigan, an institution that has grown and developed with the passing years, ever standing for high ideals in the intellectual, civic, and moral world, until she has carried the name of Michigan and the influence of her zeal and progress to the furthestmost parts of the earth.

While engaged in giving form to our educational system, and finding by careful survey the resources of the state, the legislature was at work upon other matters which, for the time being, were of more absorbing interest to the general public.

This was the beginning of what may be termed the **Railroad Age**, and the people of Michigan were among the first to seek to realize the possibilities of railway transportation. In 1830, the territorial council had granted incorporation to the Pontiac and Detroit Railway Company. This was only about nine months after George Stephenson had made his trial trip with the "Rocket," the first successful locomotive constructed.

**The Building of Railroads**

Although no results seem to have come from this venture, a better fate was in store for the Erie and Kalamazoo Railway Company, which the territorial legislature incorporated, in 1833. Its road was open for traffic from Toledo to Adrian, in 1836. The coaches were at first drawn by horses.

Great was the joy of the people when on January 20,

1837, the first locomotive, the "Adrian," arrived from the Baldwin Works at Philadelphia. It was the third engine sent west of the Alleghany mountains, and the first in the northwest.

The same company was soon at work upon the Palmyra and Jacksonburg, which amid enthusiasm and fitting celebration, was open to Tecumseh on August 9, 1838. The progenitor of the Detroit, Grand Haven and Milwaukee was in existence as early as 1834, and a year later horse cars were furnishing "rapid transit" upon the first twelve miles of its road.

The national government had already given to the state five per cent of the net proceeds from the sales of public lands for internal improvements. A more liberal donation for the same purpose was realized, in 1841, by the grant of 500,000 acres of land. Enough had been done in railroad construction to demonstrate its practicability. The temper of the people was right—their confidence supreme.

**Governor Mason Shared** the general enthusiasm. His message of 1837 recommended a most liberal policy in the direction of internal improvements. The Governor recommended that the state should become a large stockholder in the various enterprises, and thus give material aid to their construction, and have a voice in their management.

**The Legislature Entered** heartily into the work of state development, and even exceeded the liberal designs of the executive. Had the suggestion of the state's becoming a stockholder in the various projects been followed, the result might have been different. After much contention, the legislature determined to build the works wholly at the expense of the state treasury, and place their management solely under state control.

**Public  
Interest in  
Internal  
Improvements**

**The Defect of Such a Policy** was soon to appear. About this time the legislature of 1837 passed several important acts. One bill provided for the survey of three railroads across the state.

The first was to extend from Detroit to the mouth of the St. Joseph River, and to be known as the Central; the second to connect the navigable waters of the River Raisin and Lake Michigan at New Buffalo, to be called the South-  
**Three** ern; the third was to have its termini at the  
**Projected** mouth of Black River in the county of St.  
**Roads** Clair, and Grand River in the county of Kent,  
**Across the** or upper Lake Michigan in the county of  
**State** Ottawa.

In this act, surveys were provided for canals to connect the waters of the Clinton and Kalamazoo rivers, and that of the Saginaw with either the Maple or the Grand.

Another act directed the Governor to negotiate a loan of five million dollars upon the bonds of the state, the proceeds to be paid into the treasury for the purposes of internal improvements. The first act, as reported from the committee, had made provision for only one road, the Central from Detroit westward.

Here the defect of building solely from the state treasury appeared. Every legislator brought forward the claim of his constituents to a share in the blessings that were to flow from the expenditure for which all were to be taxed, and so three roads were undertaken instead of one.

We can now see the five million loan would have given but little more than a respectable beginning.

**So Extensive a Scheme** of internal improvement was doomed to failure. Some of the projects were visionary, and others, although desirable, were projected into regions far in advance of the demands of business or population.

Besides the financial sky was darkening, and portends of disaster were fast gathering.

**The Currency of the Country** had not yet assumed a safe and stable basis, and the crudest of notions as to banking prevailed.

In the territorial days, the money paid by the government to its soldiers, officers, and to public enterprises with bills of the Ohio banks, which found their way to the border towns, constituted the bulk of the currency.

**The Bank of Michigan**, at Detroit, chartered in 1817, had for many years afforded all the banking facilities demanded by the people. It had started with a **The First Banking Institution** paid in capital of \$10,000. This amount was seemingly sufficient until 1824. It was then increased to \$20,000. From time to time it received other accretions, until it could claim a half million at its close, in 1842.

**The Bank of Monroe** began business in 1827, and before the close of 1834 three more were granted charters. Two of them, the Farmers and Mechanics and the Michigan Insurance Company, were in Detroit.

**Events of a National Character** were now transpiring that hastened the organization of state banks. It was during these years that the bitter contest was waged between **Jackson and the United States Bank** President Jackson and the Bank of the United States.

In 1833, he had ordered the withdrawal of the public funds deposited with it. Bills to recharter it were vetoed by him, and it was evident that its demise was not far distant.

**The Government Funds** were deposited in the state banks of the country, which were now left in full control of the banking field.

In 1834, the Bank of Michigan and the Farmers and Mechanics Bank of Detroit became depositories of government funds to the amount of \$1,500,000.

**Before Michigan Was Formally Admitted** into the Union, there were fifteen banks within its borders whose aggregate nominal capital was \$7,000,000.

Their actual capital was less than \$1,500,000, yet it seemed quite sufficient to answer the necessities of the new **Other State Banks** state. Under normal conditions, there would perhaps have been no demand for an increase in capital of the banks, but the displacement of the Bank of the United States, the wide distribution of the deposits of the government, the chartering of numerous state banks with powers to issue bills, brought on a period of inflation, and induced the wildest speculation.

**Money Was Plentiful.** It seemed a time of great prosperity, and few sought to analyze its basis. They believed that it was the result of the unprecedented emigration and the demands it had created.

The reaction came all too soon. On July 11, 1836, President Jackson issued his famous specie circular, requiring that the dues to the government, as payments for public **Payment** lands, should be made in gold and silver.

**for Public Lands** The ultimate result of this action, as a step in the establishment of a sound currency, was highly beneficial, but its first effects were quite otherwise.

It sent the bank bills to the banks for redemption, compelled them to call in their circulation, and thus brought on a period of contraction and hard times.

**The First Effects** of a money stringency were apparent in the autumn of 1836, and the people were soon voicing their expressions of displeasure against the banks. They were called "moneyed monopolies," and by the unthinking

portion of the population charged with conspiring to increase their profits through oppression.

Just how much the legislature was influenced by popular feeling against the banks, is not known.

That it was an influence felt to some extent was quite apparent, for one of the first acts to pass the legislature of

**Laws to** 1837 was "An act to organize and regulate  
**Regulate** banking associations."

**Banking** Heretofore banks had been created by spe-  
**Associa-** cial act of the legislature, now it was designed  
**tions** to provide for their organization under a gen-  
eral law. The act was copied from a similar law recently enacted in New York, which had not yet demonstrated its virtue or efficiency.

**There Have Been Efforts** made to charge all the misfortune which followed from this law to the Governor. The fact is, there were but two members of the legislature that offered consistent opposition to its passage.

Every message of the Governor dwelt upon the subject, and deprecated the evil effects of excessive bank issues. He emphasized the fact that real value could never be the produce of other than productive labor.

The law provided that any twelve freeholders of a county might make application to the treasurer and clerk of the county to open books for stock subscription for a banking association. The capital stock was fixed at not less than \$50,000, nor more than \$300,000.

No association could commence operations until the whole capital stock was subscribed, and thirty per cent in  
**Amounts** specie actually paid in. One-third of the cap-  
**Required to** ital stock was to be subscribed for and held by  
**Form** residents of the county. In addition, the stock  
**Banks** holders were required to pay in ten per cent every six months until the whole amount was paid.



**Each Association** was authorized to issue bills or notes and make loans to the amount of two and one-half times the amount of the capital stock. Each association was managed by a board of nine directors.

Before commencing business, they were required to give security to the auditor general in the form of a bond or real estate mortgage to the full amount of their circulation.

**A Safety Fund** was created by a tax of one-half of one per cent, payable to the treasurer of the state. This fund was to protect loans where the security did not prove ample.

Provision was made for frequent reports and inspection by the banking commissioner, and the framers of the law **Bank Inspection** no doubt believed that every possible safeguard had been provided. But the laws of banking were not generally understood, and there were defects in the law which left the way open for the grossest frauds.

Almost before the legislature of 1837 had adjourned,

**The Great Panic** of that year was upon the country. The demand upon the banks for the redemption of their notes in specie precipitated the crash. The effects were first felt at the great business centers of the east.

The legislature of New York authorized the banks of that state to suspend specie payments for a time, **The Financial Panic of 1837** which they did on the 9th of May.

Other states followed the example of New York. On the 12th of June the legislature of Michigan was convened in extra session to consider the same action.

Ten days later a similar law was passed suspending, until the 16th of the following May, those provisions of law whereby proceedings could be taken to forfeit the charter and close the bank in consequence of a refusal to pay its notes or debts in specie.

It provided that the notes of a bank could be offset

against any suit brought upon notes or drafts discounted by it. It restricted the circulation of banks already organized, and limited their circulation to one and one-half times the specie in their vaults.

**Legislative  
Attempts  
to Relieve  
the Finan-  
cial  
Condition**

During the period of suspension, the sale or disposal of any gold or silver by a bank and the purchase of its bills, or the bills of any other bank, at a discount were to work a forfeiture of the charter of the bank offending.

**The Powers of the Banking Commissioner** were enlarged to enforce these provisions. He was given the right to demand additional security for the redemption of a bank's circulation, and to forfeit the charter and close such banks as might be found in a "dangerous or insolvent" condition.

It was the purpose of the legislature to keep the specie within the state until financial affairs assumed their normal status. It sought to make the paper representative, the notes of the banks, circulate at par among the people. The result was that banks were allowed to organize and do business while they could not be required to redeem their notes.

In nine months, forty banks began business with a nominal capital of \$3,115,000. With the fifteen charter banks previously organized, there existed a bank for about every three thousand five hundred of the population.

**The General Banking Law** was amended in December, and three commissioners were provided who were to examine every bank once in three months. Some of the banks were honestly organized and conducted. The greater portion were creatures of every species of dishonesty.

**The Commissioners Were Honest and Capable,** but

they were obliged to labor under great difficulties. Many of the banks were located in remote and inaccessible places.

Many places in the state now little more than country crossroads, in the days of 1837 and 1838 could boast a banking association of pretentious name and nominal capital.

**Difficulties  
Which**

**Beset the  
Bank Com-  
missioners**

It would be difficult now for the average person to locate, from name, the Bank of Brest, the Bank of Singapore, the Bank of Kensington, and others, which in their day were issuing money, and were the principal institutions of the "cities" whose names they bore.

All but four of the banking associations issued bills. In some instances, the capital was not paid in. Notes were issued largely in excess of the lawful limit.

**Specie That Was Counted** by the commissioner at one bank was carted ahead to be on hand in the vault of a confederate bank when the commissioners, traveling at slower pace, arrived. The notes of such banks were taken to distant places and paid in purchase for whatever property could be obtained.

The criminality of many persons connected with the "wild cat banks" was astounding. The commissioners were energetic and faithful. As fast as dishonesty was discovered, the banks were enjoined and receivers placed in charge, but it was generally not until after their notes were in the hands of innocent people.

The receiver frequently found that the specie had mysteriously disappeared, and that the security which was to secure the circulation was worthless.

But one bank filed notice of its organization with the

secretary of state after May 16, 1838, the date fixed for the resumption of specie payment.

**Many of the Banks** did not make a pretense of redeeming their bills, and they became a total loss. The exact loss from the "wild cat banks" is not known, but it was estimated by the commissioners, in 1839, that there was a million dollars of the bills of insolvent banks outstanding. The loss to Michigan was sufficiently serious to oppress her people, and hamper her progress for many years.

**Wild Cat Banking** was not an institution peculiar to Michigan alone. For a season these banks thrived in New York and came to be known as "Red Dogs," while in other states their ephemeral existence was the occasion for names equally expressive of their character.

They were the creatures of no party's policy. They had their growth in the prevailing ignorance of sound financial principles, which the people had to learn in the hard school of experience.

**The People of Michigan** learned what Governor Mason frequently emphasized in his messages, that wealth comes from productive labor, and that a community cannot be made rich by the printing of bank notes. The desirability of a uniform currency was impressed upon the country, and a little later was evolved the sub-treasury as it exists today, it having been first suggested by Van Buren, in 1840.

While the finances of the country were so deeply disturbed, it became necessary to negotiate the five million dollar loan, for which the legislature had made provision at the same session at which it had inaugurated the scheme of internal improvements and passed the general banking law.

**The Governor Was Wholly Unprepared** to execute a mission of the character the law placed upon him, as many important matters were demanding his attention.

In 1838, he sent a message to the state senate calling  
**A Five** their attention to the law which had been passed,  
**Million** making it incumbent upon him to negotiate the  
**Dollar** loan. He asked that he be relieved from the  
**Loan** duties, and requested that a commission be created for this purpose.

For some reason, the legislature failed to act upon the suggestion, so the work was left to the young governor. He was forced to rely upon eastern financiers, and others of reputed legal and financial abilities in Detroit.

The advice that these persons gave was not always disinterested, and was sometimes unscrupulous. An effort to negotiate the bonds in England and with the Rothschilds failed by reason of their not being made payable in sterling exchange.

**A Contract Was Finally Made** with the Morris Canal and Banking Company of New Jersey by which, at their  
**Sale of** option, they were to become either the pur-  
**State** chasers of the bonds or the agents for their sale.  
**Bonds** For their commission, they were to receive two and one-half per cent.

**The State Was in Urgent Need** of funds for work already begun, and it was as good, if not a better, figure than neighboring states had obtained upon their bonds, but misfortune seemed to attend every phase of the state loan.

It was before the days of express companies. When the Morris Canal and Banking Company delivered the first installment of \$250,000, it was placed in a trunk and brought to Detroit under guard of Governor Mason and a lawyer companion.

When the trunk was turned over to the bank and its con-

tents counted, it was found that some five thousand dollars **Fraud** had mysteriously disappeared. The governor **Discovered** had the money returned to the trunk, and **by Gov.** notice was publicly given of the theft. **Mason** Information was given that the bills bore a private mark by which they would be known if put in circulation.

In a few days the bills, except one of twenty dollars, were mysteriously returned by mail to the Morris Canal and Banking Company. The incident was the occasion of much public scandal.

**The Morris Canal and Banking Company** soon sold, or sub-contracted, three million of the bonds to the United States Bank of Pennsylvania. All of the bonds were in the hands of these two corporations, and the state, by agreement, was drawing against them for stipulated installments by ninety-day drafts. When not more than one-half of the **Failure of** face value of the bonds had been realized, a **Banking** suspension of specie payment was again gen- **Companies** eral throughout the country.

Both banks defaulted in their payments and ultimately became bankrupt. The state now found that the banks had dishonestly hypothecated the bonds, upon which they had made no payment, to the amount of nearly two and one-half million, to secure their own debts.

This condition was a serious blow to the people's cherished scheme of internal improvement in Michigan.

**Failure and Bankruptcy** was chronic throughout the country. Had Michigan borne only her share with the country at large her people would have found the burden grievous. Added to the general condition, was the burden **Burden-** of a debt of more than five millions for only **some Debts** half of which she had received consideration.

Even the half received had been expended in works that, for some time, could not be self-supporting. To follow the

tedious details of the five million loan, and the state's work of internal improvements would be to little purpose.

The bonds upon which the state had received full payment were recognized as obligations to be paid in full, both principal and interest. The bonds upon which the state had received but part payment were recognized as obligations only to the amount received. The state, upon their surrender, issued new bonds for the amounts equitably due upon them.

The holders of the last mentioned bonds were slow to **State Debts** accept this adjustment, but ultimately all did **Paid** so, and all such bonds were retired. Although **in Full** it was a trying ordeal, the people of Michigan never for a moment contemplated repudiation.

**They Loyally Kept Their Contracts**, paid their debts, and saved their credit and their honor.

The work on the Central and the Southern Railways was still prosecuted with abated vigor, but the other works **The Central** of internal improvement were discontinued. **and the** The half million acres of public lands, which **Southern** had been granted to the state by the general **Railroads** government for internal improvements were now the only source from which to draw funds to continue operations.

In 1846, the Central road was completed as far as Kalamazoo, and the Southern as far as Hillsdale.

**The People Were Now Weary** of the projects into which they had gone with so much enthusiasm eight years before. Their plans had been in advance of the commercial needs of the state, entailing burdens beyond their abilities to bear. The conviction had grown that such works could be more economically prosecuted through private or corporate enterprise.

**Certain Boston Capitalists** purchased the Central road

for \$2,000,000, and chartered the Michigan Central Railroad Company for its operation.

The Southern road was sold to a company of gentlemen, the most of whom were from Monroe, for the sum of \$500,000. One would suppose that the opening of a new country, "wild cat banks," and internal improvements, would have absorbed all the energy of the Michigan pioneer, but such did not seem to be the case.

**The Spirit of the Revolution** and the war of 1812 had not yet wholly disappeared. Many people still entertained an unfriendly feeling toward Great Britain, so that when the Canadian rebellion broke out in 1837, it found many sympathizers along our national border.

Michigan, by reason of its proximity, was a favorable rallying point for such sympathizers, and the

**"Patriots' War,"** as the disturbance of 1838 and 1839 was called, had many enthusiastic but misguided zealots from our state within its ranks. In January, 1838, a company on board the schooner *Ann* sought to take the fort at Malden, but the vessel was disabled by a cannon shot, and all on board fell into the hands of the Canadian authorities.

Governor Mason later called out the militia to protect our neutrality, but a band of "Patriots" broke into the United States arsenal at Dearborn and stole five hundred stands of arms. The return of these was enforced by General Brady, but other arms were procured and collisions took place in which several lives were lost upon both sides.

Although there were but comparatively few men involved, the fights were designated as the battles of Windsor and Fighting Island.

**The War Ended** in the rout of the "Patriots" at all



points. A few of the leaders were executed, some imprisoned, and still others banished to Van Diemen's Land. Many of the Canadians fled the province to become pioneers and worthy citizens of our own state.

If the first administration of our state affairs witnessed incidents of depression and disaster, it likewise witnessed incidents of substantial growth and progress. As a part of the program of internal improvements, a start had been made upon the construction of a

**Ship Canal** around the Falls of St. Mary at the "Soo." Complications with the national government, however, delayed the prosecution of the work for many years. In 1838, the state prison was located at Jacksonburg, as Jackson was then called, and construction began upon a building planned upon the lines of the prison at Auburn, New York.



#### DETROIT AND YPSILANTI RAILROAD. NEW ARRANGEMENT.

**T**HE Passenger Cars will leave the Depot, at Detroit, for the west, every day at 10 o'clock, A. M.

On their return, will leave Ypsilanti at three o'clock, P. M. until further notice.

The freight trains will leave Detroit at 6 o'clock A. M. and Ypsilanti at 11 o'clock, A. M. every day.

Goods intended for transportation, must be delivered before 2 o'clock, P. M. on the day previous to their being forwarded.

L. B. MIZNER.

(From the Detroit Morning Post of June 9, 1839.)

for the abolishment of imprisonment for debt, a reform which was brought about before the close of his administra-

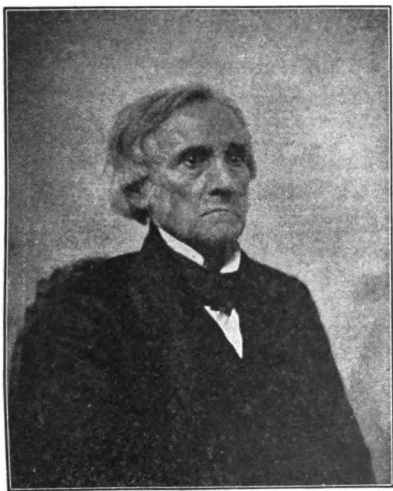
The governor's messages show that his influence had much to do with elevating our penal institutions to the high plane they have ever occupied.

The governor's messages were likewise frequently emphatic

tion. The legislature was diligent in the enactment of laws which, according to the times, was thought would promote the general prosperity. Laws were enacted for the incorporation of manufacturing companies.

**The Manufacture of Beet Sugar** at this early day was one of the purposes for which incorporation might be effected. Internal improvements had been the one great absorbing issue before the people. Such improvements

were projected on a scale twenty years in advance of the times. They dwarfed the consideration of other issues, and their collapse for a time paralyzed well nigh every constructive effort.



WILLIAM WOODBRIDGE.

### **Political Reaction**

**Followed** in the wake of the financial disturbances that came upon the country with the panic of 1837. The campaign of 1839 was one of more than

ordinary bitterness in Michigan. The founding of new institutions and the projecting of new enterprises within the state had given rise to personal feelings. **An Exciting Political Campaign** With the campaign cry of "Woodbridge and Reform," the whigs elected William Woodbridge governor with a legislature and state officials in political accord.

**Personal Bitterness** did not cease with the election. The legislature even refused to let the exaugural message of Governor Mason be read, although it was a document filled with timely suggestions and fervent loyalty.

The concluding sentence of his message was, "Identified with the early history of Michigan as a state, she shall have, **Change of State Officers** wheresoever the vicissitudes of life may place me, my earnest and continued desire for her prosperity and welfare, and my anxious and fervent prayer, that He who holds in His hands the fate of nations and the destinies of men, will bestow upon her every blessing a free and enlightened people can desire."

**It Was a Matter of Regret** that the asperities of politics refused the return of sentiments equally generous. For a time, a hostile legislature sought to make political capital from the undoing of Governor Mason and his friends.

The young governor never lost his popularity with the people. They loved his generous nature, and believed in his honesty and integrity. During the years in which he was discharging his many official duties, he had been a close student, and long before the close of his official career as governor, he had become a member of the Detroit bar.

In 1841, he removed to New York City to engage in the practice of his profession. A bright future seemed to be opening before him, when he died suddenly on **Death of Stevens T. Mason** the 4th of January, 1843, having contracted scarlet fever while attending a literary gathering with Washington Irving at Staten Island.

Imposing funeral and memorial services were held at Detroit upon the receipt of the news of his death. It was a service in which all the departments of the state government took part, and which was indicative of sentiments that were genuine and sincere.

For long years his mortal remains rested in an obscure cemetery in the city of New York. With passing years came a better understanding of the man and his work, and the legislature of 1905 appointed a commission to superintend the removal of the remains to Michigan soil.

On June 4 of that year, amid civic and military honors, they were deposited in Capital Park, Detroit, the interment being in the very foundation of the Capitol of the territory and first state government. In due time the spot will be marked by a monument of Michigan's appreciation and regard for her first governor, who, although a boy in years, was a man in the loyalty and fidelity with which he served her interests.

#### REVIEW.

Give the principal provisions of the new constitution. What public lands were granted for public improvements? Give the names of Gov. Mason's appointees to state offices. Outline the life of John D. Pierce and his work. Outline the new plan for our judiciary. Who were appointed members of our supreme court? Mention some conditions which influenced the early years of Michigan as a state. What were "paper cities"? Who was the first state geologist? Why is he one of Michigan's great men? When was the University of Michigan created? What can you tell of its government? When did the first class enter the university? What was the purpose of university branches, and where were they located? Tell of the establishment and the difficulties attending the establishment of the first railroads of Michigan. What policy of construction and management was adopted? Why did this prove unsatisfactory? What public improvements were provided for by the legislature of 1837? What banking facilities had Michigan at this time? Show how the establishment of state banks affected the financial condition of Michigan. What legislative enactments of the regular session of 1837 were passed to improve conditions? Were they effective? Why? Why was an extra session of the legislature necessary, and what was its work? Describe "Wild Cat Banking." What was its effect? How was this condition finally remedied? Why was a state loan necessary, and how was it negotiated? What unfortunate occurrences attended the making of the loan and the payments for bonds? What was the condition of internal improvements? Why did the people tire of their cherished schemes? What plan was adopted for continuing improvements? Give an account of the "Patriot's War." What substantial changes and improvements were made during the administration of the first governor? Why did political reaction follow the panic of 1837? Describe the last years of Mason's life. Where is his resting place?

## CHAPTER XII.

### A PERIOD OF RETRENCHMENT.

**William Woodbridge**, who succeeded to the governorship in 1840, had seen long service in Michigan before the organization of the state government.

Like Lewis Cass, he had emigrated to the territory from Marietta, Ohio, to become the territorial secretary, in 1814.

**The Only Whig Governor of Michigan** Five years later, he was advanced by election to the position of delegate in congress. In 1828, he was made a member of the supreme court. In the constitutional convention of 1835, he was the most active member of what might be termed the opposition party in that body. He had likewise served as a minority member in the state senate of 1837.

**The Three Years Following** the state's admission had brought considerable accretion to its population. In 1840, the census returned 212,267.

Detroit had become a city of more than nine thousand people. Monroe, Marshall, Pontiac and Ypsilanti could show populations ranging from seventeen to twenty-five hundred. The state had a valuation of about thirty-eight millions, a little more than the present valuation of the county of Washtenaw.

**It Taxed the Energies and Resources** of such a commonwealth to maintain its government and institutions, and pay the interest upon its five million and more dollars of debt.

The campaign of the whigs, in 1839, had been one of

denunciation and promises. When the legislature met in January, public expectations demanded satisfaction to an extent not within its powers. Many of the ills which oppressed the people were national in their character. Such as were susceptible to influence by state legislation could be remedied only through economy and retrenchment, and that process is seldom satisfactory to the people who turn majorities.

One of the first acts of the legislature was the

**Election of Augustus S. Porter** to succeed Lucius Lyon as member of the United States senate. Porter was a leading member of the Detroit bar, and at the time of his selection for the senatorship, was a prominent factor in the political situation in that city, having been elected its mayor, in 1838. He removed from the state, in 1848, and there was little more of interest connected with his official career.

Lucius Lyon, who had been a conspicuous figure in the territorial days, remained a resident of the state, and in 1842, was elected to congress from Grand Rapids.

In 1845, he was appointed surveyor general of Ohio, Michigan, and Indiana. This office was in line with his early profession. He continued to hold it until his death at Detroit, in 1851.

**The Legislature** took much time for investigations of former state officials. Honest purpose and party politics were closely blended. Majority reports condemning Governor Mason and his associates, and minority commendatory reports fill many pages of legislative proceedings, and evidence the tense, ungenerous, political feelings of the time.

The legislature, however, found time for much action of a highly beneficial character. Laws attempting to further

safeguard expenditures in internal improvements were enacted.

**The School Law Was Amended** and further perfected, and a consistent effort was made to limit state expenditures.

During this session, most of the northern counties of the southern peninsula, some twenty-nine in number, were laid out. There was an evident desire upon the part of the legislature to perpetuate the Indian names in Michigan. Sixteen of the counties were given names from the important personages of that departing race. Three years later, the names of a number were changed. The Indian names, in many instances, gave way to those drawn from the Emerald Isle, Rautawaubet becoming Wexford, Mikenauk becoming Roscommon, Keegisee giving place to Antrim, and Raykakee becoming plain county Clare.

**Attention Was Now Drawn** to the upper peninsula, which the state had accepted almost under protest in adjustment of the southern boundary. The legislature of 1840 endeavored to remove the obstacle interposed to the construction of the ship canal at the Falls of St. Mary by gaining the national reserve at that place, and adopted a memorial to congress setting forth the richness of the country, the extent of its lake navigation, and the benefits to accrue to the whole country, especially to New York, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, and Wisconsin from the construction of a ship canal.

The memorial included a communication from Lucius Lyon. In closing he said: "It is, in fact, emphatically a national work and ought to be and I trust will be, constructed by the general government." This statesmanlike view was many years in being realized, and not then until after the state had constructed a canal from the proceeds of

a land grant from the national government. There were no populous places in the whole upper country.

**The American Fur Company** was, as yet, the sole means of communication between civilization and its wild shores and still wilder people, but the transition was about to begin.

The legislature of 1840 granted a charter to the pioneer corporation formed to operate in the upper country, known as the Lake Superior Fishing and Mining Company. Discoveries were soon made, from which the upper peninsula has become one of the richest regions in the world.

**The Ascendancy of the Whig Party** in Michigan was limited to one administration. The party organization was disrupted by the quarrels that followed the death of President Harrison. In Michigan, the situation was not rendered more harmonious by the selection, in 1841, of Governor Woodbridge to succeed John Norvell in the United States senate.

He was elected by a coalition of democrat and whig members, over James Wright Gordon, the lieutenant governor, who was the caucus nominee.

In the state campaign of 1841, the reaction was at its height, and John S. Barry, the democratic candidate for governor, with state officers and a legislature of his political faith, were chosen by large majorities. At this time, the financial condition of the state was at its lowest ebb. Both the Morris Canal and Banking Company, and the Bank of the United States at Philadelphia, had now defaulted in their payments upon the five million dollar loan. There was scarcely a banking institution left in the state, and only one in Detroit.

Under such conditions, it was to the good fortune of the state that

**John S. Barry Was Selected.** Like many of Michigan's early officials, Governor Barry was a native of



New Hampshire. He was in his fortieth year when he **Governor** assumed the duties of his office in January, **John S.** 1842. Few men in public life in Michigan **Barry** have been more highly honored with public confidence than John Stewart Barry.

Before coming to Michigan, in 1831, he had received a thorough academic and legal training. He settled in Constantine, in 1834, to engage in mercantile pursuits. He was a member of the constitutional convention of 1835, and of the state senate from 1835 to 1838. He was a man of incorruptible integrity, tenacious opinions, and hard common sense.

Governor Barry was especially fitted to hold the reins of government during these years. He practised and enforced the most rigid economy, without weakening or dwarfing the institutions of the state.

**The Story Became Current** that he cut the grass from the capitol lawn in order that he might sell the hay and place the money in the treasury. Salaries of **An Eco-** all state officials suffered a marked reduction, **nomical** the governor setting a wholesome example by **Adminis-** signing a bill that took a quarter of his own. **tration**

Expenses were curtailed wherever possible. With returning national prosperity, Michigan began a career of recuperation and progress.

Governor Barry was chosen by an increased majority at the election of 1843. The constitution prohibited a governor from holding more than two consecutive terms, so that his official tenure terminated January 5, 1846. But for the constitutional provision, he would have been again selected, as he was at the election of 1849.

He served the state as the last governor under the constitution of 1835, and as the only man in Michigan who has served three terms in that high office.

**The Interval of Four Years** was filled by three men, Alpheus Felch, William L. Greenley, and Epaphroditus Ransom. Governor Felch was elected in 1845, and served from January 5, 1846, to March 4, 1847. He was elected United States senator by the legislature, and the balance of his term was filled by Greenley, lieutenant governor. Ransom became governor January 3, 1848, and served one term. Governor Ransom was one of the members of the first supreme court, holding the position until his elevation to the governorship.

**Alpheus Felch** was likewise a man whose memory the state should ever reverence. He was a native of Maine, a graduate of Bowdoin College, in 1827, when in his twenty-third year. Among his college contemporaries were Hawthorne, Longfellow, Franklin Pierce, and others of lesser fame in the field of politics and letters.

Governor Felch became a resident of Monroe in 1833, and ten years later of Ann Arbor, where he died June 13, 1896, in the ninety-second year of his age. It could surely be said of him "that he died full of years and honors," for in his long life he had served successively as a member of the first three legislatures, bank commissioner, auditor general, member of the supreme court, governor, United States senator, and one of the commissioners for the adjustment of the Spanish and Mexican land claims in California. He had served as a member of the board of regents of the university, and when well past the average life's meridian, had served as Tappan Professor of Law in the law department of that great institution.

His death found his long life's record untarnished by blot or blemish. In the list of Michigan's public servants we find the name of no one who served her interests with higher

purpose, or who is entitled to fairer fame than Alpheus Felch.

From 1842 to 1850, under the governorships of Barry, Felch, Greenley, and Ransom,

**Michigan Traveled** the conservative but sure road of progress. These were years that marked steady advances and no retrogressions. In 1842, Detroit attained **Years of Progress** absolutely free education, a goal for which the state at large was striving, but which it did not attain until after the adoption of the constitution of 1850.

In this year, the board of supervisors supplanted the system of county commissioners that had been brought into existence in 1838.

The Indian title to the upper peninsula was now wholly extinguished, and in 1843, the counties of Michilimackinac, **New Counties Organized** Chippewa, Schoolcraft, Marquette, Ontonagon, and Delta were created. It had been surmised for some years that the region might be rich in mineral deposits, but as yet, neither iron nor copper, in commercial quantities, had been discovered.

**The Honor of the Discovery of Iron** belongs to William A. Burt, who had been a resident of Michigan since 1822. He was a skilled surveyor, and a man of remarkable inventive genius.

He invented the solar compass, an instrument by which the sun, instead of the magnetic needle, is utilized in surveying. In 1844, Mr. Burt, a United States **Discovery of Iron at Negaunee** deputy surveyor, was surveying in the vicinity of what is now the great Jackson mine at Negaunee. As the work progressed, the solar compass disclosed a great variation in the magnetic needle.

So unusual and pronounced became the variation, that

Mr. Burt and his assistants began investigating for the cause. They had to do little more than scrape the thin soil from the surface to bring the rich ore beds to view. These men, enthusiastic in their work, made a memorandum of their discovery upon their maps, but in no manner sought to profit thereby.

It was only through the chance remarks of a half breed Indian at the Sault, that P. M. Everett of Jackson learned the story of the discovery, and was thus able to locate and develop the Jackson mine.

**Copper Was Known to Exist** in certain sections of the Lake Superior country in the days of the French explorers. Attempts at copper mining had been made, but commercial copper had not yet been found. This was discovered by John Hayes of Pittsburg.

Mr. Hayes had been a prospector in the vicinity of Copper Harbor, in 1843, but not until two months after William A.

**Copper** Burt had uncovered iron ore at Negaunee, did he discover the famous Cliff mine, near Eagle River. The mine was famous as the first copper mine to be developed in the Lake Superior region, and, so far as known, the first in the world that yielded pure or native copper.

**Men of Science** were slow to accept the great discovery, for previously copper had only been found in composition with other minerals. It was not supposed to exist in any other form.

Scientists are not yet agreed how the Michigan copper deposits are the exception to the well nigh universal rule. Before the close of 1848, crude furnaces were in operation at the new found deposits of both iron and copper, and their limited products had found their way to the industrial centers of the country. But the lack of a ship canal at the Sault Ste. Marie was a serious handicap.

In 1849, a band of hardy pioneers began what was destined to be the

**Charming City of Marquette.** The people began to realize the possibilities of this wonderful region.

It was while prosecuting the duties of his office as state geologist in this fruitful field for effort, that Dr. Houghton was drowned in Lake Superior near Eagle River, October 13, 1845.

While the people were thus active for the development of material resources, they were likewise active for the perfecting of their institutions, and for legislation, promoting good government and true progress.

In 1844, the legislature enacted a law which has generally been designated as "the emancipation of married women."

**Rights of** Prior to this time, the rights of married women  
**Married** over their individual property had been ~~much~~  
**Women** restricted and rules both inequitable and unjust  
had been imposed.

This law placed the property of married women on the plane it now occupies. It was one of the first laws of the kind to be enacted in the United States.

Heretofore the lands which had been granted by the general government for educational and other purposes, had been under the control of the superintendent of public instruction. The talents required in supervising the state's educational efforts, and those required in properly caring for the state's vast landed interests were certainly very dissimilar. The legislature, in the preceding year, had very wisely created the

**State Land Office**, to which was given the charge of all state lands. In 1844, the office was located at Marshall, and from this time dates the office of commissioner of the state land office.

The state having disposed of its railroad interests, in 1846, was free to devote her energies to institutions of state concern.

**The State Constitution** had provided that the seat of government should be at Detroit, or such other place as might be prescribed by law, until the year 1847, when it should be permanently located by the legislature.

This provision clearly indicated that the framers of the constitution did not wish to make a permanent location until the growth of population had made clear the one most to the advantage of the people. When the matter was brought before the legislature, by the message of Governor Felch, the opposition to its remaining at Detroit assumed many phases.

**Detroit Had to Contend** against the jealousy of other localities. Among other objections, it was urged that it was too far removed from the geographical center of the state, that its proximity to the national boundary would place the capital and the departments of the state government too near the menace of Canada and British power.

This last objection may now seem of little weight. The public mind was different sixty years ago. Many people then viewed the objection as based upon sound reason.

Perhaps the opposition to Detroit that carried greatest influence came from those who desired the capital located in the newer portion of the state, so that the state might receive the benefit that would accrue from the building up of a capital city in such a quarter.

**Many Towns Made Active Competition** for the prize. Detroit, Ann Arbor, Albion, Battle Creek, Byron, Charlotte, Corunna, Caledonia, DeWitt, Dexter, Eaton Rapids, Flint, Grand Blanc, Ingham, Jackson, Lyons, Marshall, and Owosso were among the number. All received votes, but

finally the township of Lansing, in Ingham county, where there was not even a village, was selected.

The commissioners, who made the location, placed it upon section sixteen, which Governor Felch had wisely withdrawn from entry and sale while the matter was pending in the legislature. This one act of Governor Felch resulted in a gain to the school fund of the state of more than one hundred thousand dollars.

Before the close of December, 1847, the forest had been felled and the

**Capitol of Michigan Erected.** Several years were passed before it was reached by other means than the slow moving stage coach, over highways whose slough holes and corduroys left never-to-be-forgotten memories in the mind of the traveler.

The new town bore the name of "Michigan."

**The Name Was Changed to Lansing** at the first session of the legislature, which convened at the new capital January 1, 1848.

The year 1848 likewise marked the first action of the state looking to state care for its unfortunates. Governor Ransom signed the bill which resulted in the establishment of the state asylum for the insane at Kalamazoo, and the school for the deaf, dumb, and blind at Flint. For some time the people had looked forward to the time when they should have connection with the outside world through "magnetic telegraph," as it was then termed. On March, 1848, the Detroit papers announced the good news that the first line had reached that city from New York, and that the first message had been received.

**State Asylum at Kalamazoo and School for Deaf, Dumb and Blind at Flint**

From this time, the news from the east was no longer a week old when published in the daily papers of Detroit.

During all these years the school interests had kept pace with the state's progress. Nearly every settlement was within reach of the district school house, although it might be a log one with puncheon floors, and a continuous bench about its rough interior.

The cities, and many of the villages, could boast of schools of pretentious character.

**The University** in its literary department was now graduating yearly classes, and its work was being ably supplemented by the colleges and institutes already in operation at Albion, Kalamazoo, Olivet, Spring Arbor, and other points. It had become evident that there was urgent need of a special institution for the training and education of teachers. The legislature recognized this need, and in 1849, the

**State Normal School at Ypsilanti** was created. For nearly half a century it remained the only state institution of its kind, exerting a marked beneficial influence in the educational field.

As if to make Michigan's diversified experiences complete, in 1846, a

**Colony of Mormons** took up their abode upon the Beaver Islands, adjacent to the northwestern shore of the lower peninsula. They were an outgrowth of the main body under Joseph Smith at Nauvoo, Illinois.

James J. Strang became the leader of the Michigan colony, and was generally known as King Strang. He was a man of considerable force of character and education but, his practices and teachings characteristic of the Mormon church did not harmonize with established religious opinions.



Bitter feelings were engendered among his followers and he was assassinated in July, 1856, and his colony soon dispersed.

The year, 1847, brought the state another accretion in population, but of decidedly different sort from the colonists of Beaver Island. They were a goodly number of colonists from the Netherlands who sought, upon the west shore of Michigan, to secure for themselves and their children a higher degree of material prosperity and religious liberty than was afforded in the Fatherland.

They became the founders of the city of Holland, and the advance guard of a large body of devout, industrious citizens of our commonwealth.

**Lewis Cass**, who for six years had been absent as Minister to France, returned to Michigan in 1842, and in 1844, was chosen as the representative in the United States senate. In 1848, he became the democratic nominee for the Presidency, the only Michigan citizen to be thus honored.

He was defeated by Zachary Taylor, the whig candidate, no doubt through the disaffection of the free soil democrats, under the lead of Martin Van Buren. Defeat did not lessen the confidence or regard in which he was held by the people.

In 1849, he was re-elected to the senate, serving continuously until 1857. It was during his first years in the senate that the war with Mexico was begun and brought to a close.

The long and distinguished service of Cass in the high places of his country, made him a commanding figure in the events of the time, and brought to his state a prestige perhaps out of proportion to its population and industrial importance.

**The Requisition of the President upon Michigan for**

volunteer troops was fully met, and eleven companies of Michigan men saw service south of the Rio Grande. Some were with Scott on his memorable march from Vera Cruz to the city of Mexico, and with the dashing Phil Kearney on his celebrated charge on the Garetta, and at the battle of San Antonio.

Still others did garrison duty at Cordova, where climate and disease wrought sad havoc in their ranks. It is a matter of congratulation that their service and bearing was such that **Michigan in the Mexican War** Governor Ransom could truthfully write in the records of the state: "Of all the heroic band composing the American army in Mexico, none have served their country more faithfully, bravely, and successfully than those from our own state. Officers and privates, regulars and volunteers, all have devoted themselves to their country's cause with a determined energy and unconquerable courage that would have distinguished an army of veterans."

**The Days of the Late Forties** may be said to have been times when the leaven of liberty was working the world over. Democracy was shaking the governmental foundations of Germany, France, Italy, and Hungary. In our own country, the frowning front of the great slave question was rising into view.

People were thinking of larger liberties, both for themselves and for others. The constitution of 1835 had well served the purposes of the state, but it **A New Constitution Desired** embraced some features that were at variance with the growing sentiment of the people.

The appointment of state officials and prosecuting attorneys by the governor no longer gave satisfaction.

**The People Desired a Closer Relation** with their public servants. The provision of the constitution providing for

the formation of corporations only by a two-thirds vote of each house of the legislature, had become an obstacle to progress.

The nature, if not the extent, of the ore deposits of the upper peninsula had become generally known, and there was a rush for charters by companies eager to assume the hazards of mining ventures.

Plank roads had become an attractive field for corporate



A VEHICLE FACTORY FIFTY YEARS AGO. (See Page 270.)

effort, and the single legislative session of 1848 was called upon to grant charters for twenty-two of the former and forty-five of the latter companies.

A few companies were organized for manufacturing and other purposes.

The people desired a change in the organic law so that companies might incorporate under a general act without awaiting the meeting and caprice of the legislature.

From these and other reasons the desire for a new constitution had become quite general, and the legislature of 1849

submitted the question of a constitutional convention to the voters at the general election. The people showed their practical unanimity by declaring for a convention by a vote of 33,193 in a total vote of 37,291.

**The Convention, Composed of One Hundred Delegates,** assembled at Lansing on the first Monday of June, 1850. Their work was completed and submitted to the people the following November.

The constitution was adopted by the decisive vote of 36,169 to 9,433.

An amendment providing for "equal suffrage to colored persons," submitted at the same time, was defeated by a vote of 32,026 to 12,840.

**The Constitution of 1850** in some respects was a radical departure from the one of 1835.

The elective was substituted for the appointive system in the selection of the heads of various departments of government. Corporations were to be formed under general laws, which were to remain subject to legislative control and repeal.

Provision was made for a judiciary composed of eight circuit judges with supreme court powers. A supreme court of four members, as we now know it, was created six years later.

The office of justice of the peace was retained and jurisdiction of justices increased. County courts were abolished, and provisions made whereby grand juries might be dispensed with. The powers of boards of supervisors were enlarged, and an effort made to bring the legislature in closer responsibility to the people by requiring its members to be elected from single districts, except in cities and townships having more than one member.

**The Rights of Married Women** were now guaranteed by

the constitution. The humane provision, providing for homestead and personal property exemptions from execution for debt, was included. Free schools were made a part of the educational system.

The university was put under a board of elective regents, and provision made for an agricultural college, for the normal school, for benevolent institutions, and for township libraries.

**The Educational Trust Funds**, created by the constitution of 1835, were retained, and the proceeds from specific taxes and escheated lands were to be used for the purposes of the primary school fund.

Enough has already been detailed to indicate that the constitution of 1850 was far more specific than that of 1835. With experiences fresh in mind, they provided that the state could not aid or be interested in either corporate stock, or works of internal improvement, except in the expenditure of land grants for the latter purpose.

**The Credit of the State** was not to be given to any person, association, or corporation. A general banking law could not be enacted until it first received the affirmative vote of the people.

Except in the instances of repelling invasion, suppressing insurrection, and defending the state in time of war, no debt could be incurred beyond \$50,000. The salaries of circuit judges, members of the legislature, and state officers were permanently fixed, and in several instances, there were provisions excluding them from leaving one office for another.

**The Legislature** was to meet every two years instead of yearly, as under the former constitution. Several constitutional restrictions were imposed; not only were subjects excluded from their consideration, but the formalities of legislation were, in large degree, specified.

The question of the benefit derived to the people, through

the many limitations on legislative power in the constitution, has been one in which there has been unanimity of opinion among neither jurists or laity.

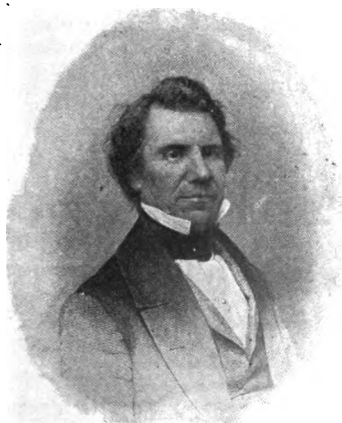
There have always been many who have contended that, between broad limits, the legislature should be left free to pursue its own will. It is believed that, in general, the limitations and specific restrictions of the constitution have been salutary, and that they have more often stood in the way of unwise legislation than state progress. •

Perhaps the one thing that has given rise to most friction and discontent, has been the fact that the salaries limited in the constitution have been much less than the rewards from other occupations.

Many efforts have been made, by constitutional amendments, to increase them, but with one or two exceptions they have as often failed.

**The Small Salaries Paid** may have been a very important factor tending to general conservatism, not only in state, but in the lesser political units as well. By the schedule of the constitution, a governor and lieutenant governor were to be chosen at the election of November, 1851, and to continue in office for a term of one year.

**Robert McClelland of Monroe** was chosen governor under this provision. Governor McClelland had added to strong natural abilities, careful training. He was



ROBERT MC CLELLAND.

a graduate from Dickinson College, Pennsylvania, in 1829.

A lawyer by profession, he had come to Monroe in 1833. It is safe to say that no man in the history of the state was ever honored with a more extensive or varied public service.

He was a member of both constitutional conventions, **First Gov-ernor under Constitu-tion of 1850** three times a member of the state legislature, and as many times elected a member of congress before being chosen governor. He was re-elected in 1852, his Whig opponent being a young, but successful, merchant of Detroit who had recently served a term as mayor, and who was destined to become one of the foremost characters in the nation, Zachariah Chandler.

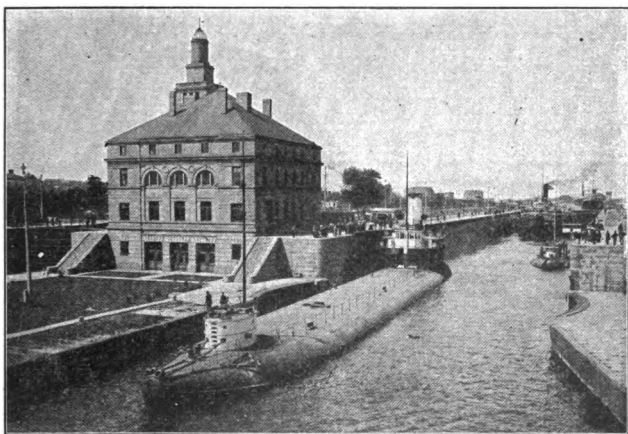
**The Railroad Conspiracy Case.** At about this time, the Michigan Central Railroad Company suffered the loss of its depot at Detroit by a mysterious fire. Suspicion was directed towards a large number of citizens, residing near the railroad, between Grass Lake and Jackson.

It was charged that they had been the authors of depredations upon the property and business of the company since 1849.

It was claimed that their motive was revenge and retaliation for losses occasioned by the killing of stock upon the road, for which the company would pay no compensation. In April, 1851, the grand jury of Wayne county indicted about fifty of the citizens of Leoni and Michigan Center for conspiracy. Many of these were men of standing in the communities.

They were tried at Detroit, the trial consuming the greater part of the summer of 1851. Some of the most eminent attorneys of the country, among whom was William H. Seward of New York, participated in the trial.

It resulted in the conviction of twelve of the number indicted, who were sentenced to terms of imprisonment varying from five to ten years. Public opinion was far from satisfied with the fairness of the trial or the guilt of the accused, and they were all soon pardoned. The case was the occasion of great public interest at the time and is known to history as the railroad conspiracy case.



GOVERNMENT BUILDING, LOCKS AND CANAL AT SAULT STE MARIE.

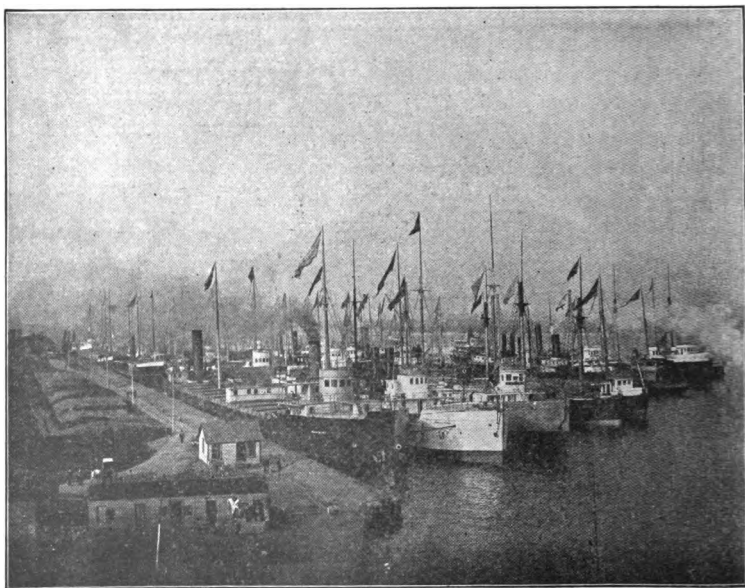
**The Legislatures of 1851 and 1853** were largely occupied in accommodating matters to the change in constitutions. The legislature again called the attention of congress to the urgent need of a ship canal around the Falls of the Sault Ste. Marie. In 1852, congress made a grant to the state of 750,000 acres of public lands to aid in the project.

Alpheus Felch, who, for several years, had been chairman of the committee on public lands in the national senate, was largely instrumental in obtaining the grant.

**The State Was Successful** in securing the construction



of the work within the appropriation, and in 1855, it **Ship Canal** was opened for the passage of navigation. **at Sault** Although its locks were diminutive as compared **Ste. Marie** with the present structures, they were suited to the conditions, and from the day they swung open to our inland commerce, the career of the upper peninsula has been one of increasing development and progress.



A BLOCKADE AT THE "SOO."

**Governor McClelland** Was Called, in March, 1853, to the cabinet of President Pierce as Secretary of the Interior, a position he filled with benefit to his country, and with distinguished honor to himself and the state whose faithful servant he had been. The remainder of his term as governor, which

**Governor McClelland as Cabinet Officer**

closed January, 1855, was filled by Lieutenant Governor Andrew Parsons.

Up to this time, with a single exception of the one administration of William Woodbridge, the state had witnessed an unbroken line of democratic victories. Causes were now at work, national in their scope and bearing, that were destined to revolutionize political conditions in both state and nation.

**A New Set of Characters** were to come upon the field of active effort. Their lives and doings are the themes of familiar interest in our day, while the generation of those whose resolute courage carved a commonwealth from a wilderness, and with intelligence, fidelity, and loyalty laid the foundations of the institutions of a great state are, in a measure, forgotten.

#### REVIEW.

Give a brief sketch of the life of Michigan's second governor. Why were economy and retrenchment necessary during his administration? In what capacity did Augustus S. Porter serve Michigan? Lucius Lyon? What was the work of the new legislature? Name ten counties already formed (1840). What obstacle existed to the construction of a canal at the Falls of St. Mary? How did the legislature seek to remove this? What was the condition of the upper peninsula at this time? How did the administration change in 1842? Give reasons for the financial situation. Who was John S. Barry? Why was he specially fitted for his position? Tell of some of his economical acts? Why was he not elected for a third term? Tell something of the life of Alpheus Felch; of William L. Greenley; of Epaphroditus Ransom. What was Michigan's condition under Felch, Greenley, and Ransom? Mention some changes effected during the years of their administrations. Give an account of the discovery of iron in the northern peninsula. Give an account of the discovery of copper in the northern peninsula. Of what importance was the "married woman's act"? Why was the creation of the state land office a wise provision? Where was it located? What was its purpose? Where was the capitol at this time? Was this a permanent location? Why? When and how was the location changed? Describe the new town "Michigan" at this time. What class of unfortunates were provided for by the state in 1848, and how? When was Michigan connected with the outside world by telegraph? Why was this important? What was the condition of education? When, why, and for what purpose was the Michigan State Normal School established? Tell of King Strang's reign. Who founded the city of Holland, and why? Tell of Lewis Cass' further services. What part did Michigan take in the Mexican war? Why was there need for a new constitution in Michigan in the "forties"? How may a constitutional convention be called? Compare the provisions of the old and new constitutions. What constitutional limitations are sometimes criticised? Who was the first governor under the new constitution? Tell of his life. What was the railroad conspiracy case? When and how did congress make possible a ship canal at the "Soo." What political parties had flourished in Michigan? Which one had been most successful?

## CHAPTER XIII.

### THROUGH CIVIL STRIFE TO PEACEFUL DAYS.

**The Year 1854 Will Ever Remain** an important one in the history of Michigan, as in the history of the nation. It marks the definite development of that political force which was to result in the overthrow of human slavery within our country, and which was to bring a train of events of far reaching and momentous consequences.

It marks the commencement of a decade, the most heroic in our history, in which Michigan and her people were to play an important part.

**The Question of Slavery** had been, for years, one of growing perplexity in state and national councils. Its champions were ever forceful and aggressive. They sought to carry slavery into the new states and territories, that an even balance might be maintained in congress.

**The Statesman of the North** dreaded the ultimate conflict and had yielded to compromise after compromise. The conviction grew that, whatever the solution was to be, it would not be through further concession. From a combination of causes, anti-slavery sentiment was strong in Michigan.

**Carved from the Great Northwest**, her soil had been dedicated to freedom, her population had been drawn from the rural communities of New England, where the blood of liberty was untainted. Neither large cities nor manufacturing industries had yet developed within the state. She was bound to the land where slavery thrived by neither the ties of commerce nor kindred.

Geographically situated within easy access to Canada, its southeastern portion became one of the best traveled routes of the

**Underground Railway**—that mysterious agency by which slaves were assisted to the safe asylum of the British dominion.

Cass county had the distinction of being the junction of the "Quaker Line," which started from the Ohio river, and of the "Illinois Line," which had its southern terminus at St. Louis.

In 1846, it was estimated that there were as many as a hundred runaway slaves residing in Cass county, mostly in Penn and Calvin townships, while more than a thousand had been assisted across the border. These unfortunate people told many stories of cruelty and suffering that awakened sentiments of resentment against an institution so foreign to the genius of our government.

**The Voice of Michigan** grew with ever-increasing tone for freedom and for union.

In 1846, Robert McClelland, then a member of congress, had been one of the few who, by joining forces, had brought forward the Wilmot Proviso, as indicative of the sense of northern democrats.

The state legislature of 1848 expressed its dissent against slavery's being permitted in any acquired territory before it was vested with state sovereignty.

The session of 1849 instructed the Michigan congressmen to support the Wilmot Proviso.\*

The failure of most of them to observe these instructions, and the passage of the Fugitive Slave Law, brought loud murmurs of discontent. It loosened political ties and created discordant elements.

---

\*An amendment offered in Congress, Aug. 8, 1848, to a bill, placing \$2,000,000 at the command of President Polk with which to negotiate a peace with Mexico. The amendment was to the effect that neither slavery nor involuntary servitude should ever exist in any part of the territory that might be acquired by treaty with Mexico. The amendment was offered by David Wilmot of Pennsylvania. See Robert McClelland.

**The Kansas-Nebraska Act\*** was passed on the 30th day of May, 1854. This repealed the compromise of 1820, and made slavery possible in the virgin territory of the west.

The lion of the north was now aroused, and the smoldering fires of discontent broke forth in flames of earnest zeal. Nowhere were men actuated by more earnest purpose than in Michigan. They differed in their political affiliations, in the means to be employed, but they differed little in the end desired.

After the campaign of 1852, the Whig party became dis-

organized. Its equivocal policy soon left it with small northern following. Northern democrats were reluctant to abandon their party name, and the time honored principles for which it stood, and were halting between the doctrines of "Free Soil" and "Squatter Sovereignty." There were many who believed that the institution of human slavery was gaining, rather than losing, by compromise.



KINGSLEY S. BINGHAM.

---

\*Passed Congress May 30, 1854. It repealed the Missouri Compromise and strengthened the Fugitive Slave Law; but the general principle it attempted to establish was that each territory upon becoming a state should have the right to determine whether it should be slave or free. The act provided that the "Territory of Nebraska or any portion of the same when admitted as a state or states shall be received into the Union with or without slavery as their constitution may prescribe at the time of their admission."

**Under the Name of "Free Democrats,"** they were first **Convention** in the field to strive, through concerted action, **of Free** to set bounds to its further extension and **Democrats** power. On the 22d day of February, 1854, their delegates met at Jackson.

A declaration of principles was adopted, and Kingsley S. Bingham of Livingston county nominated for governor, with the state ticket in sympathetic accord. Other meetings and conventions followed.

**Throughout the Whole North,** it was a time of earnest thought and serious purpose.

The passage of the Kansas-Nebraska Act intensified the anti-slavery sentiment, and in May, 1854, a petition for the **A Mass** calling of a mass convention to nominate a **Convention** ticket and express sentiment against the extension of slavery had received the signatures of 10,000 voters.

**The Convention Assembled** at the city of Jackson on the 6th of July. It was a large gathering of men assembled from every section of the state. They represented all political views, drawn together by the one issue.

In their declaration of principles only the one question, extension of slavery, received special attention. The discordant elements could not have harmonized on many other questions.

**A Ticket Was Chosen** from the various political factions thus brought together. Kingsley S. Bingham, the nominee of the free democrats, headed the ticket, while old political antagonists of the whig and other faiths were given other positions.

Although the causes which gave birth to the republican **Birth of the** party were at work throughout the whole **Republican** country, the Michigan convention was the first **Party** to nominate a ticket under the party name of

republican. The party may justly be said to have been born "Under the Oaks" at Jackson.

**The Opposition to the Democratic Party**, in the campaign of 1854, bore the name of republican in seven states. Five of the seven were the states of the northwest territory, whose fundamental charter, through the genius of Thomas Jefferson, had provided that they should forever be dedicated to human freedom.

**The Democrats Nominated John S. Barry** in opposition to Kingsley S. Bingham, but his known worth and old popularity could not rally the people from a determination to express their convictions on the question of aggressive slavery.

Bingham and the republican ticket were elected by **The Re-** decisive majorities. The republican party came **publicans** into power in Michigan within four months **Successful** after its organization, from which time, with the exception of two brief intervals, it has continuously maintained its ascendancy.

**Kingsley S. Bingham**, who was thus elevated to the governorship, was by no means a man unknown to the people or untried in official position.

He was a native of Camillus, New York, and had had an **Sketch of** academic and legal training, when he resolved **the New** to become a farmer. In 1833, he emigrated to **Governor** Green Oak, Livingston county, and proceeded to carry out his new-formed resolution.

He took an active interest in political affairs, and as a democrat, served five sessions in the legislature between the years 1837 and 1842, during three of which he was chosen speaker of the house.

**As a Democrat**, he had likewise served as a representative in congress from 1846 to 1850. Here his voice and

vote were both given for the Wilmot Proviso, a service in line with his strong convictions, and in keeping with the sentiment of the people of his state.

Governor Bingham was re-elected at the election of 1856, by a largely increased majority.

At the close of his term, in 1859, he was elected to the United States senate, serving until his death, in 1861.

**The Administration of Governor Bingham** was successful and highly popular. His achievements were pre-eminently the rewards of his commanding abilities, and the honors which Michigan bestowed upon him were no more than the equivalent of the services he rendered to Michigan.

He was succeeded in the governorship by Moses Wisner  
**Governor** of Pontiac, whose service in that capacity was  
**Moses** limited to one term, which expired January 2,  
**Wisner** 1861.

The years from 1854 to 1861 in Michigan were marked by substantial growth and progress. The legislature of 1855 passed strong resolutions against the principles of the Fugitive Slave Law and the Kansas-Nebraska Act.

**A More Effective Protest Was Registered** against the Fugitive Slave Law by the passage of the stringent Personal  
**Personal** Liberty Law, by the terms of which the right  
**Liberty** of trial by jury, and the benefit of habeas cor-  
**Law** pus, were insured to every person claimed as a fugitive slave. Their defense was made obligatory upon the prosecuting attorneys of the state.

Common jails were closed against their detention, and at least two witnesses were required to make a *prima facie* case against any person claimed to be a slave.

With such a law, backed by strong public opinion, the Fugitive Slave Law became but little more than a source



of irritation to keep alive the sentiments of opposition to slavery, as a hateful institution.

There was no session from 1854 to 1860 that was unmarked by resolution or enactment indicative of the tense feeling on the great slavery question, but it by no means distracted attention from the many questions of state policy and concern.

**A Strong Temperance Sentiment** had, for several years, permeated all political parties, and in 1853, a prohibitory liquor law was enacted. This law was subsequently pronounced illegal, because made to depend upon a referendum to the voters of the state.

In 1855, a prohibitory liquor law was enacted without popular intervention. This was sustained and continued in operation until repealed, in 1875.

The constitution had made provision for the establishment of an

**Agricultural School**, and had set aside twenty-two sections of salt spring lands for that purpose. The legislature, in 1855, provided for the establishment of our agricultural college near Lansing, — the pioneer among agricultural colleges of the world. Its first class entered in May, 1857.

The brick buildings of the institution were surrounded by the stumps of the forest but recently felled. During its subsequent years it has received liberal appropriations from the state, and in common with the other agricultural colleges of the country, has received material resources from the national government.

It has continued to develop, and with the great university

and the other branches of the state's educational system, has reflected a high standard of civic progress.

**Governor Parsons, in His Retiring Message**, recommended the establishment of an institution to be known as a house of correction for juvenile offenders. Governor Bingham, in his first message, urged the necessity of such an institution. The legislature provided for its erection.

It was located in Lansing, and was ready for inmates in **Industrial School for Boys** September, 1856. As we have come to better understand some of the great social questions that are ever with us, the character of this institution has gradually changed.

From the prison of 1856, it has become the industrial school of today, an institution that is in reality all that its name implies.

By the constitution the creation of an independent supreme court had been postponed for a period of at least six years.

Legislation to that end was enacted during the session of 1857, when provisions were made for a

**Supreme Court of Four Members**, to be organized January 1, 1858. Except as to the number of members, and that it met alternately at Lansing and Detroit, the court remains essentially as then constituted.

By election, George Martin became the first chief justice. The associate judgeships fell to Randolph Manning, Isaac P. Christiancy, and James V. Campbell. Within the succeeding ten years, upon the deaths of Judges Manning and Martin, Thomas M. Cooley and Benjamin F. Graves were elected to the vacancies.

**Cooley, Christiancy, Campbell, and Graves**, through their surpassing abilities, for many years gave to Michigan judiciary a reputation for learning and correct interpretation

of the law, unsurpassed by that of any other state of the nation.



THOMAS M. COOLEY.



ISAAC P. CHRISTIANCY.

The year of the organization of the supreme court, 1858, also witnessed the creation of ten circuits within the state, with a circuit judge presiding over each. **The Big Four** In a general way, their powers and jurisdiction have remained unchanged through succeeding years.

In 1857, the senatorial term of Lewis Cass terminated, and through legislative choice, the mantle fell upon Zachariah Chandler.

**The Contrast Between Lewis Cass and Zachariah Chandler** was one of more than slight degree. The learning and cultured graces of Cass were quite lacking in his successor.

It could not be said that Chandler was lacking in either **Cass and Chandler** courage or conviction, or the power to make both effective.

He lacked in the spirit of conciliation, and so his political opponents were his political enemies; but he wrought in a time when conciliation was perhaps not to be expected.

**As Michigan Approached** the year 1860, her people had every reason to congratulate themselves. She had weathered the dark days of financial disaster, and was witnessing the return of material prosperity.

The Michigan Central and the Michigan Southern railroads had crossed the corporate limits of Chicago within a few hours of each other, in May, 1852.

On November 22, 1858, the Detroit and Pontiac, absorbed in the Detroit, Grand Haven, and Milwaukee, ran its first train into its western terminus.

**The Prophecy of Governor Mason**, that within twenty-five years from the state's admission three railroads would



BENJAMIN F. GRAVES.

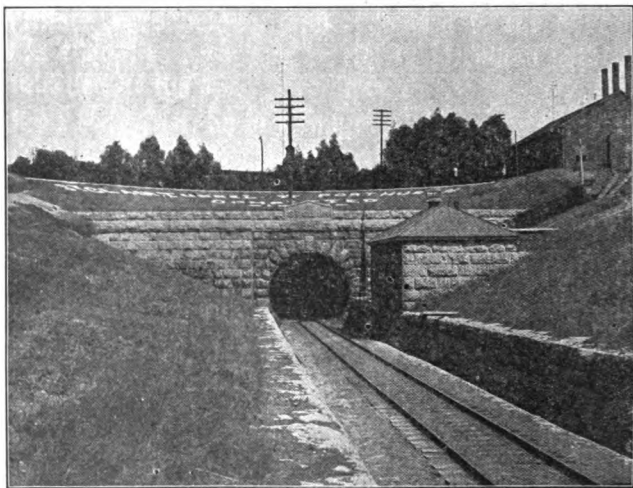


JAMES V. CAMPBELL.

cross the state from east to west, was fulfilled. The year previous cuts were made through the St. Clair flats and

Lake George, providing a twelve foot waterway from Lake Erie to Lake Superior.

The whistle blast of the propeller was now a familiar sound along the pine-clad shores, where, but a few years before, the only craft was the frail canoe of the Indian hunter, and the French voyageur.



GRAND TRUNK R. R. TUNNEL NEAR PORT HURON.

From this time, the mines and forests of the great upper country were to yield their treasures in ever increasing store.

**The Census of 1860** disclosed that Michigan had a population of nearly 750,000, an increase of over 241,000 in ten years.

More than one-half of all the people lived in the two southern tiers of counties, while all but about 81,000 resided in the south four.

**Population**

Of this number, over 21,000 had found homes in the

upper peninsula, in the vicinity of the newly developed mines.

**The Ax of the Lumberman** had scarcely scarred the borders of the mighty forests which, during the next three decades, made many fortunes surpassing in extent the fondest dreams of earlier days of the state's industries.

While the people of Michigan were thus congratulating themselves upon the progress attained and in prospect,

**The Political Sky** of the nation was fast darkening with the oncoming storm of civil strife that was destined to try, in fire and blood, the strength of union, and the fortitude of men.

The contest that was coming involved more than the institution of human slavery. It was, primarily, **Civil War** a contest involving a great constitutional question.

From the adoption of the federal constitution, two schools, or parties, had read into that great instrument that interpretation which best served their notions of government.

**Thomas Jefferson**, as a great thinker and leader of men, had given to his followers a party faith in the "Inviolable Preservation of the Federal Constitution."

He advocated the support of the state governments as the surest bulwark against anti-republican tendencies.

**Alexander Hamilton**, of brilliant intellect and powerful mind, viewed government from another standpoint.

He and his followers read the constitution with broad and liberal interpretation. They believed in the centralizing of power in the general government, and in restricting the sovereignty of individual states.

The difference between a strict and loose construction of the constitution was the political battle ground of the first

seventy years of our national life. The two great sections of the country came naturally to represent the divergent views.

**Virginia Had Become a State** long years before the nation was formed. Her statesmen and her people had confidence in their state government, and less interested in any government farther removed.

As a state of great extent and influence among those of her immediate region, the views of her statesmen became the views of a large and influential party. For a time, the tenets of strict construction dominated national policies, and claimed its adherents without respect to section.

**If New England and the North** changed, by degrees, to the opposite theory, it was likewise the result of natural conditions. The smaller states of New England came to look to the national government to counterbalance the influence of the larger states to the south.

Time and natural conditions gave impetus to the great commercial centers of the east, and an ever increasing flood of emigration poured to the new northwest.

**Five New States** were born that stood in a new and closer relation to the central government; for the initial stages of their administrations had been in that government's hands.

These conditions tended to magnify the national, and repress the state, spirit of the north. There was still one more factor more potent to that end than all the others combined—the question of slavery.

In colonial days, every colony had become slaveholding, and when England negotiated the Treaty of Paris, but one state—Massachusetts—had become non-slaveholding.

**The First Great Action**, which was prophetic of its end, was the Ordinance of 1787, which forever dedicated the northwest to freedom. The federal constitution had left the

institution of slavery as a matter of state policy and concern.

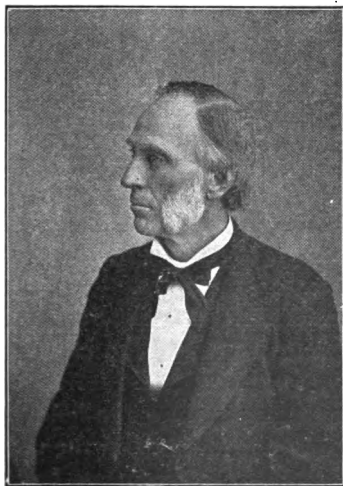
The institution was not slow in retrenching itself behind a strict interpretation of that document.

With half of the nation freed from bondage, it was equally sure that within that portion, sentiments of the moral enormity of slavery would continue to grow.

**Slavery a  
Constitutional  
Question**

With the growth of opposition to the institution upon moral grounds, there came a corresponding desire for such an interpretation of the federal constitution as would further limit and set bounds to its spread and power, if not to its ultimate abolition.

Such, broadly stated, were the factors which ultimately resulted in the disruption of union, and war between the states.



AUSTIN BLAIR.

If Michigan took a positive stand during the years of intensely earnest discussion, her position was equally certain when it became evident that a peaceful solution of the contest was no longer possible.

**The Memorable Campaign** which placed Abraham Lincoln in the Presidency, placed Austin Blair in the governorship of Michigan. No man ever

became governor of the state at a more trying time than did Governor Blair.

It was the fortune of the state that he assumed duties that



he was fitted by temperament, training, and experience to ably discharge. He was graduated from Union College, in 1837, and four years later, as a lawyer, began his Michigan career.

He was forty-two years old, when in 1860, he was nominated for the governorship by the republican party. He had back of him, in both house and senate of the state legislature, a record of service that stamped him as a man of clear perception and fearless courage.

For four years his loyalty was unfaltering and his zeal unflagging in the union cause. They were years of well **Michigan's** high gratuitous service, for the salary of the **War Gov-** governor was then but \$1,000 a year. It is to **ernor** the honor of the state that recognition of his patriotic service, as War Governor, has been made through the erection of his statue in deathless bronze before the Capitol of his commonwealth, with whose history his life was so inseparably connected.

**When the Conflict Broke**, and war's lurid light was thrown athwart the darkening sky, Michigan was prompt and energetic in her action.

When, from the government at Washington, there came a cry for men and money, it was answered by no discordant note from the people of these northern shores.

**Upon Retiring from the United States Senate**, in 1857, the venerable Lewis Cass had entered the cabinet of James Buchanan as secretary of state.

His every effort during the stormy days was to hold each state in its place, to preserve the constitution and the union.

His advice to the President, that reinforcements be sent to Charleston and Fort Sumter, was refused, and he **Loyalty of** resigned from the cabinet on the 14th of **Lewis Cass** December, 1860. With a sad heart he sought the retirement of his Detroit home.

**He Was Still a Democrat** of the Jackson school, and when the bombardment of Fort Sumter had fired the ardent spirit of the loyal north, he stood up as chairman of a Union meeting of his home city, and "thanked God that the American flag still floated over his home and friends." Continuing he said, "You need no one to tell you what are the dangers of your country, nor what are your duties to meet and avert them.

"There is but one path for every true man to travel, and that is broad and plain. It will conduct us, not indeed, without trials and suffering, to peace and to the restoration of the Union."

Worthy sentiments from Michigan's foremost hero of the old northwest. How fully the people of Michigan shared his loyalty, was attested by the regiments that, from first to last, took the road he had said was "broad and plain."

**Although Michigan Was Far Removed** from the seat of war, her proximity to the Canadian border made the border cities constantly apprehensive of difficulties from that quarter.

Canada became an asylum for many persons of southern sympathy, and likewise of those who were willing to become the active agents of her cause. On the 19th of September, 1864, a band of these conspirators, with the evident design of liberating confederates who were imprisoned on Johnson's Island, captured the steamer Philo Parsons below Detroit.

They likewise captured the Island Queen at Middle Bass Island, but discovering, as they approached Kelley's Island, that their designs had been penetrated, and that the garri- sons were prepared, they returned to the Canadian shore without accomplishing their mission.

The incident created intense excitement, and was the occasion for extraordinary vigilance along the border.

**There Was Scarce a Battle** of the war in which Michigan men did not participate. 90,747 of her sons were to be counted in the ranks, approximately an eighth of the population of the state. Of this number, nearly 13,500 died in service.

**If the State Was Lavish** with her blood, she was likewise lavish with her treasures. The state government **Michigan** expended \$2,802,859 for the purposes of the **in the War** war, while its townships and cities added \$8,157,748 more. Before 1867, relief to soldiers' families had totaled \$3,591,248.

#### REVIEW.

What can you say of the condition of human slavery in 1854? Mention some compromises already effected. Mention some reasons why the anti-slavery sentiment was strong in Michigan. What was the underground railway? What part did Michigan play in its operation? State some ways in which Michigan voiced her sentiments regarding slavery. What were some of the principles for which the Whig party stood? Why did it become disorganized? Describe the organization of the republican party and state its one important sentiment. Who was its candidate for governor? Give a sketch of the life and services of the first republican governor of Michigan. From 1854-1860 how did the legislature regard slavery? What temperance laws were passed? Give an account of the establishment of our agricultural college. When was the Industrial School for Boys established? When was the supreme court as it now exists established? Circuit courts? Name some of the early judges of the supreme court; of the circuit courts in your county. Compare Lewis Cass and Zachariah Chandler. Compare the Michigan of 1860 with that of 1835. Define a strict constructionist; a loose constructionist. Tell something of the contest between the two parties. How did slavery affect the political situation? Define Michigan's position on the slavery question at this time. Who was our state's war governor? Sketch his life. What was the part of Michigan in the civil war? What was the position of Lewis Cass on this great question? Mention some incidents which involved the territory of the State of Michigan in this war.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### A HALF CENTURY OF STATEHOOD COMPLETED.

**Michigan Was Destined to Respond**, in a marked degree, to that spirit of progress which energized the nation at the close of the great Civil War. The natural resources of the state had now quite generally been discovered, and their importance appreciated.

With returning peace, men set themselves to developing these resources upon a scale, and with an energy, that promised a speedy repair of the loss sustained through years of wasteful war.

**Henry H. Crapo, of Flint**, became governor in January, 1865. He was re-elected and served until January, 1869.

Governor Crapo was a native of Massachusetts, and had only been a resident of the state since 1856.

He had been wise, and as early as 1837 had made investments in the pine lands of his future state with a wisdom and upon a scale that brought him large financial returns, when he came to Michigan and became active in their development.

● He died during the year following the close of his administration, leaving an enviable record in a broad and varied field of effort. Political, lumbering, agricultural, railroad-ing, and literary pursuits, all claimed his attention, and in each he showed the qualities of a master mind.

The legislature that was elected with Governor Crapo conferred the honor of an election to the United States senate upon

**Jacob M. Howard**, he having been first appointed in 1861, following the death of Kingsley S. Bingham.

He continued the junior senator from Michigan until his death, in 1871. Although to a succeeding generation the name of Jacob M. Howard is not so familiar as that of some of his contemporaries, he is, nevertheless, entitled to a high place in the list of Michigan's distinguished public servants.

From his advent in Detroit, in 1832, to the time of his death, he was a forceful factor in the history of the state.

He was a man of broad culture, with attainments as a lawyer that were far above the average. He was a leading figure in the organization of the republican party, where his influence was most potent. He had served as a whig in the state legislature, and as a member of congress. In strength and force of character he stood well to the fore, and his memory will ever deserve well from the people of Michigan.

Among the incidents of the administration of Governor Crapo, may be mentioned the renewed

**Activity in Railroad Construction.** The quickening industries of the state, and the settlement of new areas called for better transportation facilities.

The people of the counties, townships, and cities, apparently forgetful of past experience, began bidding for railroad construction through various bonding and other schemes.

The legislation which sought to authorize or validate such bond issues was generally vetoed by Governor Crapo, and was the occasion of considerable expression of dissent then. Time has demonstrated the wisdom of his action.

Numerous acts of the same character had been passed by the legislature of 1864, and it is reasonably certain that, had not the governor interposed his veto, the municipalities of the state would have been drawn into many ventures of doubtful value,

**Vetoed by  
the Gov-  
ernor**

and been burdened with such a debt as would have proven a serious obstacle to their progress.

**The Position of the Governor** was, in 1870, sustained by a decision of the supreme court, which held that the principle of such legislation was unconstitutional.

The decision in this case, which is generally known as the Salem case, was of great value, for it effectually closed the door to all private enterprises that would benefit through public taxation.

When we see the numerous schemes and subterfuges that, from time to time, have been attempted by municipalities **The Salem Case** to promote special interests, we can imagine the result had it not been for the wise constitutional prohibition, and the equally wise construction placed thereon by the supreme court.

**The Constitution Provided** that, at the general election of 1866, the question of revision of the constitution should be submitted to the vote of the people.

This was done, and the proposition for a convention was carried by an overwhelming majority.

**The Convention**, composed of one hundred delegates, assembled at Lansing on the 15th of May, 1867. After a **Another Constitutional Convention** seventy-four days' session, the convention submitted the draft of a constitution following closely the provisions of the constitution of 1850.

It embodied some new features, among which was the provision empowering townships and cities to vote aid to railroads.

The document likewise fixed the salaries of all state officers at fair amounts, and further provided that all salaries might be increased by a two-thirds vote of the legislature. In addition it sought to remedy

**Many of the Defects** of the constitution of 1850, but the

people, as a whole, were not in favor of voting aid to railroads, and they had never been in favor of giving the salary-fixing power to the legislature.

Many times since, when these two propositions have been proposed as amendments to the constitution, they have uniformly been defeated.

While the proposed constitution embraced many features that the people desired, they refused to accept them when joined with features they did not desire. The result was that the proposed constitution was defeated by a vote as decisive as the one which called the convention into existence.

January 1, 1869, Henry H. Crapo was succeeded in the governorship by

**Henry P. Baldwin.** Mr. Baldwin was a native of Rhode Island, who had engaged in a prosperous business career in Detroit, dating from the year 1838.

In 1870, he was re-elected, and so continued in the high position until January 1, 1873. He was not without experience in political affairs before coming to the governorship, having served in the state senate during the war.

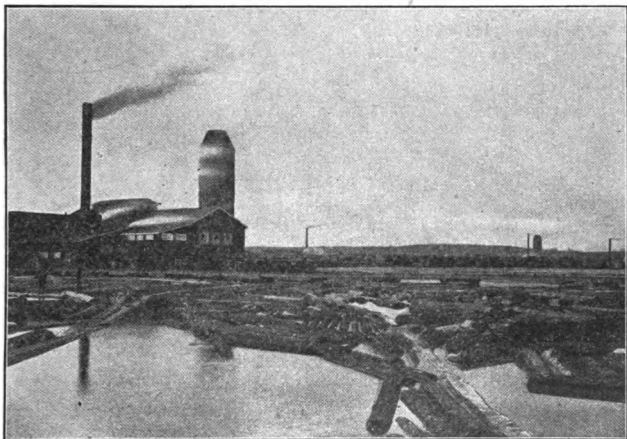
His extensive business experience made his administration an eminently practical one, and consequently of great value.

It was during the administration of Governor Baldwin that

**Thomas W. Ferry of Grand Haven** was chosen to the United States senate. He had already seen political service as a member of both houses of the state legislature, and, for several terms, as a member of the lower house of congress. He was the first native of the state to be selected to a seat in the national senate.

**Michigan's Industries** were in a flourishing condition. The census of 1870 disclosed that our population had passed the million mark by 200,000.

**The Lumber Industry** led in importance. An army of woodsmen were denuding the northern counties of their



MANUFACTURING LUMBER IN WEXFORD COUNTY.

wonderful pine forests at the rate of more than thirty thousand acres a year.

From a few hundred million feet of lumber, cut in 1860, the business developed in ten years to an annual cut of two and a half billion feet of the value of more than thirty millions of dollars.

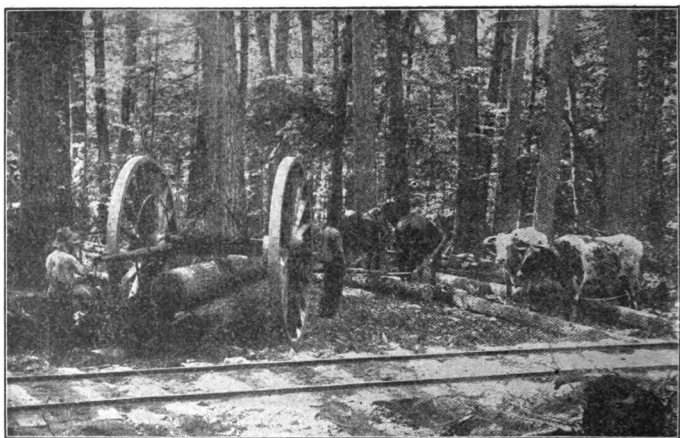
**The Salt Industry**, started in 1860, under the stimulus of a state bounty of ten cents a bushel, had developed with the lumber industry, the timber refuse being utilized in evaporating the brine.

In 1870, the Saginaw valley was forging to the lead in the national production of this one commodity, with over 621,000 barrels to her credit. This amount, which seemed



large at the time, was, in fact, little more than the beginning.

**The Sault Ste. Marie Canal** had amply demonstrated its value, notwithstanding the statement by Henry Clay that it was "beyond the remotest settlement in the United States."



LUMBERING IN THE PINE FOREST.

In fifteen years, the shipment of iron ore from the Marquette district had increased from 1,400 tons, in 1855, to 859,000 tons, in 1870.

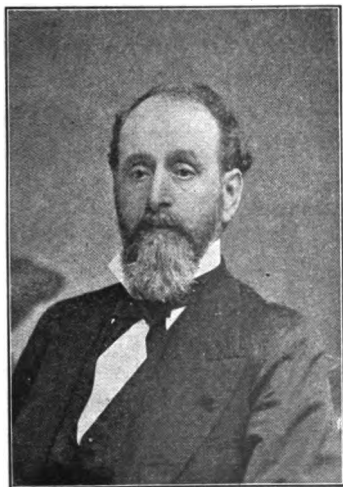
In the production of copper, Michigan, within the same time, had attained to an annual output of more than twelve thousand tons, worth from five to six millions of dollars, constituting eighty-three per cent of the national product. Nor had the farmers been idle.

**One Hundred Thousand Farms** dotted the southern counties with a rich and varied charm, or were scattered at intervals through the newer north. They were the homes of three-fourths of all the people, wherein were nurtured the highest type of American citizenship.

**The State Had Now Outgrown** the limits of its pioneer capitol. When erected in the forest of Lansing township, in 1847 and 1848, an eighteen thousand dollar structure, both in accommodation and design, could be said to embody "true magnificence."

It no longer answered for the pride or necessities of 1870. The four thousand dollar addition of 1865 had not kept it up to even pioneer standards. The first step toward

**A New State House** was taken by Governor Baldwin in his message to the legislature, in 1871. Action was taken in line with the recommendation of the governor, and on the second day of October, 1873, the corner stone of the present edifice was laid with imposing ceremonies, in the presence of an immense concourse of people.



EBENEZER O. GROSVENOR.

The first legislature to sit within the new building was the legislature of 1879.

**The Completion of the New Capitol** was a matter of much pride and gratification to the people, for the men and women who braved the trials and privations of the pioneer were then quite generally living, and looked upon the imposing structure as a monument to their citizenship and the state's progress.

**The Construction of the Building** was in the hands of a commission

composed of Ebenezer O. Grosvenor of Jonesville, James Shearer of Bay City, and Alexander Chapoton of Detroit.

The Governor was an ex-officio member of this commission. The amount appropriated for the erection of the building was \$1,525,241.05.

**The Capitol** stands as a monument to state integrity. It was not only constructed within the appropriation, but a part was actually returned to the treasury.

This record was much to the credit of the commissioners and the state whom they served. It is unusual in the history of public buildings.

To the administration of Governor Baldwin, must likewise be credited the establishment of the

**State Public School at Coldwater.** It was established in 1871, and opened in 1874. For years, dependent children had become the inmates of alms houses, doomed to grow up under the stifling influence of unwholesome surroundings. As in the establishment of the Agricultural College, so in the care and education of dependent children, Michigan was the pioneer among the states to create an institution for such a purpose.

Henry P. Baldwin was succeeded in the governorship for two terms by

**John J. Bagley**, a wealthy tobacco manufacturer of Detroit. Although a native of New York, he had from

his boyhood been a resident of Michigan, thoroughly familiar with its people and institutions.



\*GEN. GEORGE A. CUSTER.

---

\*Gallant American general, born at New Rumley, Ohio, Dec. 5, 1839, graduated from West Point in June, 1861. His youth was spent at Monroe, Michigan, where in 1864 he married his wife, Elizabeth Bacon Custer, who later became the author of "Boots and Saddles," "Tenting on the Plains," "Following the Guidon," etc. Gen. Custer served with marked distinction through the civil war, but he will best be remembered in connection with his last battle, June 25, 1876, when he with his entire command were annihilated by the Indians under Sitting Bull at the Little Big Horn.

The state was now adding to its population at the rate of about fifty thousand annually, and it was soon apparent that its charitable and penal institutions were no longer adequate to the needs of the state. This was especially true as to accommodations for the insane.

The asylum at Kalamazoo had been long inadequate to the demands, and in 1873, provision was made for the building of the Eastern Asylum at Pontiac, which was opened for inmates in 1878. Governor Bagley, in 1872, received the largest plurality that had ever been given to a candidate for that office in the history of the state; but the panic of 1873, and the exposure of the Whiskey Ring and other frauds in the administration of President Grant, caused a marked change in the political sentiment of the nation. This was shared in no small degree by the people of Michigan.

So great was the defection that, in 1874, the governor secured his election by the narrow margin of 5,969 plurality, more than fifty thousand less than it had been two years before. This wave of popular resentment gave three congressmen from the state to the democrats, and so reduced the majority of the republicans in the state legislature that they had but a majority of seven in the house and four in the senate. At the following legislative session

**Zachariah Chandler** was a candidate for re-election to the United States senate, but the issues of the war, which had brought Senator Chandler his popularity, were now passing away. His strong and aggressive nature had made him enemies in his own party, and no friends among the opposition.

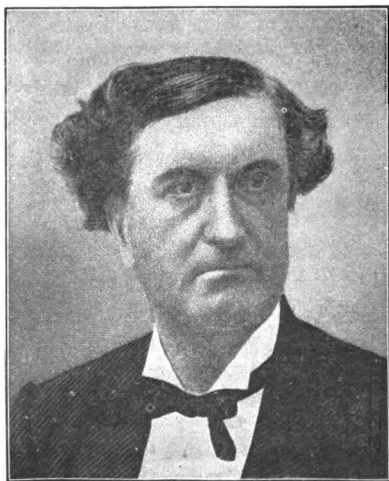
The result was a combination between the democrats and a few disaffected republicans whereby the election was given to Judge Isaac P. Christy of the supreme court, who

was acceptable to the democrats because of his more liberal views and less intense partisan spirit. The retirement of Zachariah Chandler from the national senate, where he had served for eighteen years, was by no means his retirement from public life.

The following October he became secretary of the interior in the cabinet of President Grant.

**Judge Christiancy**, who was of the judicial temperament and a jurist of high rank, soon found his senatorial labors uncongenial, and in 1879, resigned his seat to accept the position of minister to Peru.

**Christiancy Resigns** The interim had served to adjust political differences, and Zachariah Chandler was elected by the legislature, then in session, by the unanimous vote of his party. He took his seat late in March, and during the succeeding days of the regular and special session of congress he again attracted the attention of the nation, and his name was frequently mentioned in connection with the presidential nomination of the coming year. Fate had decreed otherwise. Although his voice rang out with the same old challenge, his career was at an end.



ZACHARIAH CHANDLER.

Death claimed him as he wrought with the only weapons which he

knew, and which had been most effective in the days when the nation was rent by civil war.

Sufficient time has now elapsed, so that the political opponents of Senator Chandler do not withhold from him the tribute due a strong and vigorous character. He lived and was a part of a time, when political amities were not cultivated, and so he found affection only in the hearts of his partisans.

A succeeding generation of the political faith he most bitterly assailed, may well concede that, next to Lewis Cass, he towers the most commanding figure in the history of the state.

In 1873, there was a revival of sentiment for a revision of the constitution, and a law was passed empowering the governor to appoint a commission, composed of two members from each of the nine congressional districts, to propose amendments to the constitution.

**Governor Bagley** made wise selections in the choice of members. In October, the commission reported to the governor a series of articles which were in effect a revised constitution.

It constituted a document of admirable arrangement and much merit. At the special session which met in March, 1874, the work of the commission, with a few **Another** modifications, was adopted and submitted to the people at the ensuing April election. It **Constitutional** was rejected by a majority of more than ninety **Revision** thousand. This indicated that the people were **Defeated** not yet ready to vote an increase of salaries, which was one of the features of the proposed constitution.

**The Administration of Governor Bagley** promoted many measures of improved state policy, such as, the reorganization of the militia, the creation of the office of rail-

road commissioner, and the passage of the general railroad law.

It was likewise during the second term of his administration that the policy of prohibiting the liquor traffic, inaugurated in 1855, was superseded by the taxing system still in vogue.

The next year, by a vote of the people, the restriction relative to the licensing of the sale of intoxicating liquor was stricken from the constitution by a vote of the people, yet a strong temperance sentiment still existed among the people.

**Many New Projects** were now pressing themselves upon the attention of the state. Seventy-seven of the present eighty-three counties had now been organized. The list included two, Isle Royal and Manitou, being the islands of those names, which have since been disorganized, and their territory attached to other counties of the mainland.

The rapidly increasing population and conditions essentially modern were necessitating the creation and rapid extension of the state's institutional facilities.

The responsibility of guiding administrative affairs from 1876 to 1881 devolved upon Charles M. Croswell of Adrian, who for two terms, by majorities attesting popular confidence, was chosen to the governorship. David H. Jerome of Saginaw was likewise honored from 1881 to 1883.

**Governor Croswell** was a man of much decision of character. One of the notable things of his administration was his free use of the veto power, for which **Governor Chas. M. Croswell** he was more generally commended than criticised.

In 1877, the State House of Correction and Reformatory at Ionia, which had been projected four years before, was

**Four New Institutions** put into operation, and two years later was created the State Industrial Home for Girls, at Adrian.

This institution was first designated as the Reform School for Girls. The modification of the name, as in the case of the Industrial School for Boys at Lansing, indicates a purpose to emphasize the industrial and educational, rather than the penal features of the institution.

Heretofore the blind had been cared for with the deaf and dumb at Flint, but in this year the two classes of inmates were separated, and provisions made for the care of the former in a School for the Blind at Lansing.

The Northern Asylum for the Insane was organized in 1881, during the administration of Governor Jerome.

It was in this year that the state ceded to the national government the ship canal at Sault Ste. Marie.

**The Federal Authorities** assumed control June 9, and soon thereafter the Weitzel lock, which they had constructed at a cost of more than two million dollars, was opened.

The canal now became free from toll, and in 1886, the government began the construction of the great Poe lock, **The Locks at the "800"** which is today one of the engineering wonders of the world, being 800 feet long, 100 feet wide, and twenty-one feet deep, capable of lifting the largest vessel on the lakes, in eight minutes time, from the level of Lake Huron to that of Lake Superior.

**Governor Jerome** bears the distinction of being the only man elevated to the governorship who was born within the state. It was his political fortune to be governor at a time when political conditions were such as limited his incumbency to one term.

In 1879, upon the death of Senator Chandler, ex-Gover-



nor Baldwin had been appointed in his place, and became  
**Henry P. Baldwin** a candidate for election before the legislature  
**and Omar D. Conger,** of 1881. He was defeated after a somewhat  
**U. S. Sen-ators** heated canvass by Omar D. Conger of Port  
 Huron, who had been prominently identified  
 with the politics of the state since 1850.

**The National Conditions** that had given rise to the  
 National Greenback party were still influential in Michigan,  
 and in 1882, with a lack of harmony in the republican party  
 a fusion of the democratic with the greenback party resulted  
 in the election of Josiah W. Begole of Flint, by a majority  
 of more than four thousand over Governor Jerome.

This was the first reverse that the republican party in  
 Michigan had met in the governorship since the organiza-  
**Governor Josiah W. Begole** tion of the party, more than a quarter of a cen-  
 tury before.

**Governor Begole** was a man of comfortable  
 fortune, which his own industry had acquired, and a man  
 of generous impulses.

The objections urged against him arose from the exigen-  
 cies of party politics, rather than from any basis of fact.

Before being elected governor, as a republican he had held  
 many positions of trust and honor at the hands of his party.

**The Senatorial Contest of 1883,** after a prolonged and  
 somewhat bitter struggle, resulted in the selection of Thomas  
**Thomas W. Palmer,** W. Palmer as the successor of Senator Ferry.  
**U. S. Sen-ator** The animosities engendered in this contest may  
 have, in some measure, contributed to the elec-  
 tion of two democratic members of the supreme  
 court, and two members of the board of regents in the  
 spring of 1884.

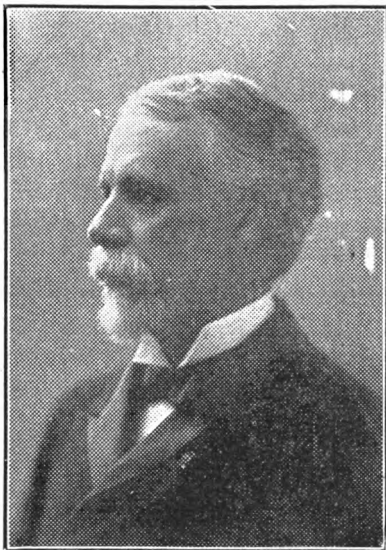
At the expiration of his senatorial term, during the admin-  
 istration of President Harrison,

**Mr. Palmer Became Minister to Spain**, and subsequently president of the Chicago World's Fair Commission. His munificence to Detroit, the city of his birth, and to worthy objects throughout the state, has been the expression of his kindly impulses, rather than the result of a purpose to profit by a show of liberality.

**Governor Begole was Defeated** for re-election, in the campaign of 1884, by General Russell A. Alger of Detroit, by the narrow margin of less than four thousand majority. The upper peninsula was now contributing to the state's revenue in such an amount, and was possessed of such population, as to entitle that region to consideration in the location of state institutions.

**As the Great Mining Interests** of the section were in constant need of men, schooled in the technology of the mining industry, the legislature of 1885 took the first steps towards the creation of the Mining School at Houghton.

The Branch Prison at Marquette was established during the same session, as was the Soldiers' Home at Grand Rapids, and the State Asylum, formerly known **as the Michigan Asylum for dangerous and criminal insane at Ionia.**



RUSSELL A. ALGER.

**Michigan Had Now Reached the Semi-Centennial** of her state's existence, and the event was celebrated with elaborate ceremonies at Lansing on the 15th of June, 1886.

It was, indeed, a proud day for Michigan. In fifty years she had grown from the twenty-third to the ninth in population, and first in the production of many of the great staple products of the country.

With not more than twenty steamboats upon Lake Erie in 1836, their number had increased in response to the **Lake and Inland Commerce** demands of commerce until their black funnels were a continuous procession by the beautiful City of the Straits. The year 1885 recorded an average of 209 vessels a day for 224 days.

From a state burdened with debt that means of communication might be extended to the state's interior, it had become a state free from debt with railroad lines of 5,220 miles, extending to its farthest limits.

**The Schoolhouse Doors** were daily swinging to three times as many children as there were people in the state when John D. Pierce, Isaac E. Crary, and Governor Mason laid the foundation of the school system, while through the great university and schools in special fields a beneficent influence was being extended to the uttermost parts of the earth.

A multitude of towns and cities were vocal with their whirr of an extensive and diversified industry, while many times ten thousand fields gave promise of abundant harvests.

It would be claiming too much to say that a retrospective view of the accumulated events of half a century, did not disclose many subjects for regret.

To a succeeding generation, perhaps the one most patent

is the disposition which Michigan made of her public lands and natural resources.

**To the Railroads of Michigan Alone**, lands in Michigan were granted by the national government of more than four millions acres, to which the state added from its own domain, 1,700,000, comprising in extent more than fifteen of the average counties of the state.

The state has received from the national government for **Public Land Grants** all purposes more than nine million acres of land, much of it of the richest timber and mineral quality, and yet royalty was never reserved on so much as a ton of ore, or a thousand feet of lumber.

The 750,000 acres, which the state gave for the construction of the original Sault Ste. Marie canal, was the foundation of many enormous fortunes.

The Calumet and Hecla mine alone, which was developed in these lands, has already paid more than \$92,000,000 in dividends.

In 1850, the federal government granted to Michigan, as it did to other states, certain lands, which the survey showed to be more than half wet or subject to overflow.

Michigan received, approximately, six million acres of these lands commonly denominated state swamp lands. For many years the policy of the state was to appropriate these lands for the construction of roads and drains.

They embraced large areas of land, many of them the most valuable in the state, but they produced less than a million dollars in cash. The greater part was disposed of in payment for presumed improvements, and showed more results in the private fortunes they created, than benefits to the public.

**The Lands Appropriated** to the uses of primary schools,

university, normal school, and agricultural college were, in a measure, safe-guarded by the constitution.

The funds created from them now aggregate five and a half millions, a sum which although large, is yet trivial as compared with the value, in timber alone, which the lands yielded to those who, through foresight or fortune, became their possessors.

**The Direct Loss to Michigan**, through the experiment of internal improvements and equally experimental banking, was considerable, but it was as nothing compared to the loss to present and future generations through the **Destruction of Forests** abandon with which, in past years, our lands were disposed of, our forests slaughtered, and our mines turned over wholly to private gain.

The policy that made such results possible was not the result of an intentional disregard of public interests, but rather the result of looking to present and immediate welfare.

It is such facts as these that should guide the action of every man in legislative authority, when his vote is a factor in the disposal of public interests. The present soon passes away, the future is illimitable. In matters of government, to provide only for the present is to temporize and invite loss, while to provide for the future is statesmanship.

#### REVIEW.

Give a short biography of Governor Crapo; of Jacob M. Howard. Tell of the need and increase of transportation facilities following the civil war. What was the Salem Case? Why was it of importance? Tell of the constitutional convention of 1867. What changes were advocated? Who followed Henry H. Crapo as governor? What can you say of his career? Who was Thomas W. Ferry? Describe the value and importance of the lumber industry at this time. State the importance of the canal already constructed at the Soo. What of the iron and copper productions in the northern peninsula? What of agriculture in Michigan? Why did the state need a new capitol? Tell of the provision for and its construction. What state institution is located at Coldwater? When was it established? What is its purpose? Tell of the services of John G. Bagley. Read in your U. S. histories of the Whiskey Ring. Mention some other frauds of Grant's administration. What changes occurred by the elections of 1874? What do these show of the power

of the ballot? In what way did President Grant honor Michigan? Mention other Michigan men honored by places in the president's cabinet. What can you say of Chandler as a figure in national and state affairs? Why did the constitution again need revision in 1874? Why was no revision made? What measures were promoted during Governor Bagley's administration in regard to (a) state militia, (b) railroads, (c) temperance question? What state institutions were established under Croswell's administration? Under Jerome's? Make a list of Michigan's governors to 1883. Why is the Weitzel lock so famous? When was the ship canal at Sault Ste. Marie ceded to the United States? What can you say of the Poe lock? Write a history of the Soo canal. Describe the political situation in Michigan in 1882. Give a brief sketch of Croswell, Jerome, and Begole. Who were the United States senators from our state at this time? Who succeeded Governor Begole? What state institution is located at Houghton? Marquette? Ionia? Grand Rapids? Why had Michigan reason to be proud of her first fifty years of statehood? Mention some things in her career which cause regret. Why had some of these mistakes occurred?

## CHAPTER XV.

### THE CLOSE OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.

**Michigan Began Her Second Half Century** with Cyrus G. Luce, a Branch county farmer, in the governorship.

Governor Luce's career was the duplicate of the career of many a man who has graced public life in this free land of ours. Born in northern Ohio, in 1824, his education was limited to the instruction imparted in the proverbial log school-house, with three terms at the Northeastern Indiana Collegiate Institute.

Young Cyrus was of that class of men who attain learning without schooling and culture, without educational training according to the established methods. He became a resident of Michigan in 1848, and as years passed, he added many broad acres to the original wild eighty which he first called home.

He rose in the confidence of the people, from supervisor of his township to be a member in the legislature, — first of the house and later of the senate. He was state oil inspector by appointment of Governor Croswell, master of the state grange, and ultimately governor of his state. At the time of the election of Governor Luce, there was a lively interest in state politics.

**The Opposition to the Republican Party** was vigorous and alert, even though at times it was a fusion of not wholly harmonious elements. Governor Luce secured his first election by the narrow margin of 7,432, and his election in 1888 by the majority of 17,145.

One of the most noteworthy things in the administration of Governor Luce was the high public character of the governor himself. Although no state institutions were created, nor unusual legislation enacted, still his administration will stand as one of the notable ones.

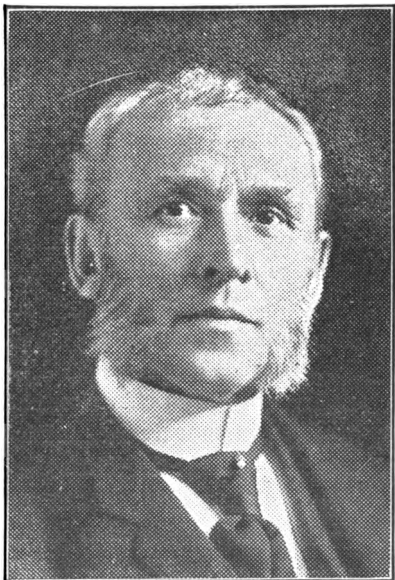
While the governor was, of necessity, a partisan, he was still the kind of a man who required something more than partisanship as an endorsement of men and measures.

**Francis B. Stockbridge, U. S. Senator** At the senatorial election of 1887, Francis B. Stockbridge of Kalamazoo, was chosen as the successor of Omer D. Conger. While Mr. Stockbridge had served in both houses of the state legislature, his greater reputation was in the business and commercial world. In the lumber and other industries, he had been very successful.

During these years, there was a somewhat active temperance sentiment in the state. In 1887,

**A Prohibitory Amendment to the Constitution** was submitted to the people. While the votes showed it to be defeated by a

small majority, the friends of the measure were never satis-



DON. M. DICKINSON.



fied that the return of the vote showed the exact condition, for the proposition carried by exceedingly large majorities in the interior counties.

At the legislative session of 1889, the so-called

**Local Option Law** was enacted to satisfy the demand for  
**Temper-** a more effective regulation of the liquor traffic.  
**ance** Like most local option measures, it has been far  
**Agitation** from satisfying in its results.

**Grover Cleveland was Now President** of the United States, and honored Michigan by selecting two gentlemen from the state to fill high positions in his official family.

George V. N. Lothrop of Detroit, a distinguished member  
**National** of the Michigan bar, was appointed minister to  
**Honors to** Russia.

**Michigan** Don M. Dickinson, whose services in the dem-  
**Men** ocratic party were already of a national character, was called to his cabinet as postmaster general.

**In the Campaign of 1890**, the conditions which had given small majorities to both Governors Alger and Luce, still  
**Democratic** existed, and after a somewhat bitter contest, in  
**Success** which personalities largely figured, Edwin B. Winans of Livingston county, the democratic candidate for governor, was elected over James M. Turner by more than eleven thousand majority.

**Governor Winans, Like His Predecessor**, was a practical farmer of high character and strict integrity. His abilities were attested by the fact that he had served  
**Governor** in the legislature of 1861 and 1865, had been  
**Edwin B.** judge of probate, a member of the constitutional  
**Winans** convention of 1867, and twice elected to congress.

**Democratic Control** at this time was destined to be short and stormy, although in many respects creditable. The parties in both branches of the legislature were so nearly equally

divided that contests were frequent and sometimes acrimonious. The administration was generally economical.

The State Prison, for the only time in its history, became self-supporting, while the expenses of other institutions and those of the state government were materially reduced.

The friends of the administration claimed the results attained were fruit of proper economy, while its opponents made claim that they were attained only through a parsimony that was unworthy of the state.

The principal enactments of the legislative session were the so-called Miner law, a partisan measure whereby presidential electors were elected by congressional districts, instead of by the state at large, and under which three electoral votes from Michigan were cast for Cleveland for president in 1893; the perfecting of the so-called Australian ballot law.

The mortgage tax law, whereby mortgages were taxed as an interest in realty, and not as personalty; the law requiring corporations to pay a franchise fee before assuming corporate powers; and the law changing the tax upon mines from the specific to the ad-valorem basis, were measures passed by this administration.

**The Election of 1892** returned state control to the republican party. John T. Rich of Lapeer was elected governor, by a little more than 16,000 plurality.

**Governor Rich**, at the time of his election to the governorship, had been much in public life. He was the fourth farmer governor, and like his predecessors of that calling, he gave the state a strong and popular administration.

At the time of his second election, in 1894, a reaction had taken place in the democratic party in Michigan, resulting

from national policies, and Governor Rich received the largest plurality ever given to a governor in the state, although he only received some sixteen thousand votes more than he received two years before.

For many years, governors had recommended in their messages the establishment of a home for the mentally deficient. In 1893, the legislature provided The Home for the Feeble-minded and Epileptic, at Lapeer.

The same year the fourth asylum, known as the Upper Peninsula Hospital for the Insane, was located at Newberry.

Up to this time, the state had confined its normal instruction to the one school at Ypsilanti, but in 1895, the legislature made a departure by creating the Central Michigan Normal School at Mt. Pleasant. This was followed, in 1899, by the establishment of the Northern State Normal School, at Marquette, and in 1903, of the Western State Normal School, at Kalamazoo,—all schools of pretentious character.

The year 1895, likewise witnessed the donation by the national government to the state, of Mackinac Island as a state park. On the island one may now see the quaint old fortress of the long gone years, and a thousand beauties of art and nature, which have justly made the island famous among the many which entrance the voyager on our great fresh water seas.

The Man, who now more than any other man, was directing the current of political activities in Michigan, was James McMillan of Detroit.

A native of Canada, he came to Detroit in his youth to embark in a business career which he made eminently successful. Before his entrance into political life, he was a man of great wealth.

Upon the expiration of the term of Senator Palmer, in 1899, McMillan was chosen as his successor.

Unlike his predecessors in the high office, his political experience was limited to service upon some of the boards of his home city, and two terms as chairman of the state central committee of his party.

He was a political organizer of consummate ability, and was three times the unanimous choice of his party for the exalted position which he occupied until his death, which occurred August 10, 1902.

He was a man of few words and quiet demeanor, chivalrous and genial. The qualities of mind that made Senator McMillan a captain of industry, made him a man of large influence in the national senate.

**During the Administration of Governor Rich**, in 1894, the people were shocked to learn that certain amendments to the constitution proposing an increase in salary for certain state officers, and which had been reported as carried at the elections of 1891 and 1893, had, in fact, been defeated, and that the returns showing favorable majorities were the product of fraud and criminality.

A grand jury of Ingham county returned indictments against many persons in high official positions for connection with the affair. Although several trials were held, no one was ever convicted.

Upon the death of Senator Stockbridge, April 30, 1894,

**John Patton Jr. and** Governor Rich gave the senatorial appointment to John Patton, Jr., of Grand Rapids.

**Julius C.** Although an able man, Senator Patton was

**Burrows,** comparatively unknown at the time of his ap-

**U. S.** pointment, and, at the ensuing session of the

**Senators** legislature, the contest for election resulted in

the choice of Julius C. Burrows of Kalamazoo.

**Mr. Burrows** was elected to congress in 1872, since which time he has been a prominent figure in state and national politics. He was re-elected to the senatorship, in 1899, and again, in 1905, he continues one of Michigan's representatives in the upper house of the national congress.

**General Russell A. Alger**, who had continued active in public affairs, was called, in 1897, to the cabinet of President McKinley as secretary of war, where he continued in service until the close of the Spanish-American War, in 1899.

The people of Michigan generally resented the criticism to which he was subjected by the eastern press, for the conduct of his department during the war, and upon the death of Senator McMillan, his appointment to the vacancy thus created was popular with the people of the state, as was his election by the legislature a few months later.

General Alger is still (in 1906) a member of the national senate. His frequent exhibitions of a kindly purpose and generous nature have endeared him to a large body of the people.

The campaign of 1896 was a memorable one in national affairs, and in the affairs of Michigan, as well. One of the results of the campaign in Michigan was the

**Election of Hazen S. Pingree** to the governorship. Governor Pingree was a native of Maine, where he was born, in 1840.



HAZEN S. PINGREE.

Before his gubernatorial campaign he was known as a successful manufacturer, and mayor of Detroit for several terms. He was a man of unique personality, and it is not beyond the facts to say that his administration was the most tumultuous in the history of the state.

While mayor he had attracted almost national attention, by proposing a scheme to assist the poor by allowing them to cultivate the vacant areas of the city, known, at the time, as

**Pingree's Potato Patch Scheme**, and likewise for his persistent contest for cheaper gas and three cent railway fare.

Since its organization, the Michigan Central Railroad had operated under a special charter from the state, which made it exempt from the general laws affecting other companies.

Upon assuming the governorship, Governor Pingree began a crusade for the forfeiture of the special charter of the Michigan Central, and for what he denominated "Equal Taxation," which was, in effect, to change the method of taxing railroad corporations from the specific to the ad-valorem basis.

**The Governor Was Re-Elected in 1898**, receiving more than sufficient democratic support to offset the opposition which he had engendered within his own party. There were four special sessions of the legislature during his four years of office, one during his first term, and three during his last.

The governor's measures could generally command the support of the members of the house, but in the senate there was quite generally a majority arrayed against them. This majority of opposition in his first term came commonly to be designated as the

**Immortal Nineteen**, and the greater number were returned to the legislature of 1899.

Laws repealing the charters of such railroads as had been organized by special charter, and providing means whereby they could bring suit to recover whatever damage they sustained by the repeal, were enacted.

**The State Tax Commission** was created, and a law passed taxing railroad property on an ad-valorum basis.

The principle of the law taxing railroads on a property tax, which had been enacted into what was known as the Atkinson Bill, was held unconstitutional by the supreme court.

**A Constitutional Amendment** was at once proposed to obviate the obstacles imposed by the decision. This amendment was adopted by the people at the November election of 1900, by a majority of more than 387,000.

The repeal of the special railway charter has brought litigation involving vast sums. Some of this litigation is still pending. The state tax commission has increased the assessed value of the state by approximately five hundred millions, and has been, by turn, the creature of both praise and denunciation.

The law passed subsequent to the constitutional amendment taxing railways upon an ad-valorum basis, has recently been sustained by the United States supreme court, whereby the railroads will contribute upwards of \$350,000 more annually in the form of taxes than they formerly contributed.

**The War with Spain** occurred during the administration of Governor Pingree. To the President's call for volunteers on April 23, 1898, no state responded more promptly than did Michigan, nor with troops more efficiently equipped.

Within six days following the President's call, the Michigan naval reserves, three hundred strong, left Detroit for Newport News. Five regiments of nearly six thousand five

hundred men responded, and went into southern camps, while three regiments saw service in Cuba.

The naval brigade saw service aboard the Yosemite, while two regiments of Michigan boys were at the battle of Fort Aguadores.

It would have been more gratifying to state pride if the state's record in the Spanish-American War could have closed with the story of the unselfish service of her sons and daughters for their country's cause.

**Before the Troops Had Returned** from their southern stations, there were rumors questioning the integrity of officials high in authority. So persistent did these rumors become, that during the closing days of 1899, a grand jury was convened in Ingham county, charged with the duty of an investigation of the doings of certain officials, who had controlled the equipment of the state's volunteers.

It was a matter of state shame and humiliation, when indictments were presented against many officials, occupying **Military** high positions of trust and honor. The **Scandal** closures showed a wide range of peculation and corruption, but the most astounding revelation was in connection with the state military board. Two of the members of this board, with a member of the governor's staff, had conspired with a firm of manufacturers of military supplies, to defraud the state of many thousands of dollars.

The subsequent trials resulted in conviction of some of the accused, who were either heavily fined or pardoned from imprisonment by the governor, during the last days of his administration.

**Governor Pingree Died in London, England**, on the 18th day of June, 1901, where he was taken ill as he was returning from a tour of Europe and Africa. He was



**Death of Pingree** subsequently buried at Detroit, amid the most imposing funeral pageant ever witnessed in that city. His life has been the subject of the highest encomiums, and the most impassioned criticism.

True it is that Hazen S. Pingree was a better judge of measures than of men. In his city and state he gave vitality to great issues, and forced measures of vast public concern against powerful opposition with a persistency unequaled, but he allowed men of unscrupulous designs and dishonest purpose to gain his confidence, and prostitute his great popularity to their own selfish ends.

**Aaron T. Bliss**, a wealthy Saginaw lumberman, was **Governor** elected to the governorship in November, 1900. **Aaron T. Bliss** His plurality of over 79,000 at that time, was succeeded by one of 37,000 in 1902.

Governor Pingree, in his messages, had frequently urged the enactment of a law for the direct nomination of candidates for public office. The principle came to be known as "Primary Reform."

During the preliminary contest for nominations, in 1900, there were many charges and counter charges of bribery and corruption in connection with the canvass. These charges gave impetus to the issue of a reform in the primaries, which found expression in the succeeding legislature, in what was then known as the Colby bill.

This measure, and the measure carrying into effect the constitutional amendment, permitting the taxation of railroads and other corporations on the ad-valorem basis, which bill allowed an increase of two members on the tax commission, consumed the time of the legislature. The latter measure became a law, but the former failed of passage in the senate.

**The Primary Reform Issue**, however, gained in strength

with the succeeding campaign, as it was given consideration in the state party platforms, and was a topic of extended public discussion.

A bill to carry the principle into effect promptly, passed the house of 1903, but like its predecessor, failed of passage in the senate.

At this session, the bill for the creation of the Western State Normal School, which had received the governor's **Two New** veto at the previous session, was now passed, **Institutions** together with a bill to create an institution subsequently located at Saginaw, and known as Michigan Employment Institution for the Blind.

This institution is designed to give state aid in industrial employment to a class of unfortunates, whose defect constitutes a serious handicap in their struggle for existence in the open field of competition.

**The Issue Presented** by the principle of direct nomination, or primary reform, continued to be the absorbing topic of political discussion, and was an important factor in the gubernatorial campaign of 1904. At the election of that year, Theodore Roosevelt, as candidate for President, received a popular plurality of 227,700, the largest, by more than a hundred thousand, that was ever given to any individual in the history of the state. At the same election,

**Fred M. Warner of Farmington**, was elected governor by a plurality of 60,228. Governor Warner, **Governor** prior to his last election, had served acceptably **Fred M.** as a member of the state senate and as secretary **Warner** of state in the administration of Governor Bliss.

The legislature of 1905 enacted a somewhat intricate and cumbersome measure for direct nominations that will require material revision and amendment to become adequate to the end desired.

**With Increasing Majorities**, a spirit of partisanship has become manifest in legislation, more pronounced than in former years. There has been a disposition to **A Proposed Revision of the Constitution** interfere, through the legislature, in municipal and county affairs in a manner that has been a source of general irritation.

The growth of cities, the great development in the industrial world, have brought new problems for solution, and a conviction has gained ground to the effect that the

**Constitution of 1850** is no longer adequate to the needs of the twentieth century. So strong has this conviction become that the proposition for a constitutional convention, submitted by the legislature of 1905, was adopted by the people at the April election of 1906, by a decisive vote.

**If the Constitution That May Be Formulated** shall be adopted by the people, it will be because the work is most ably and conscientiously done. On many occasions, the people have shown their great conservatism when dealing with their organic law.

They have shown by repeated votes that they are able to discriminate between propositions that are desirable, and those where their defeat best serves the interests of the state.

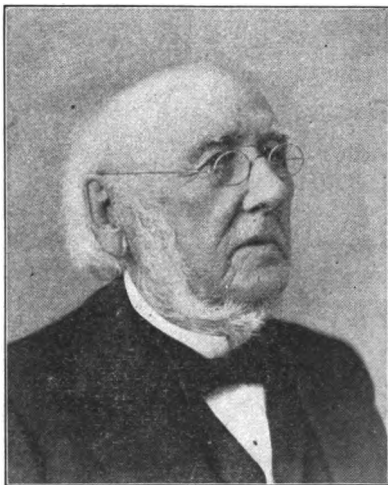
They have likewise shown that they will allow no set of propositions, however desirable, to carry through other propositions that are inimical to their interests.

As a rule, the wisdom and discrimination shown by the people of the state in their votes upon constitutional questions, is one of the reassuring facts in our history.

#### REVIEW.

Sketch the life and career of Cyrus G. Luce. What is the local option law? Why has it not been entirely satisfactory? Name the Michigan men honored by Grover Cleveland. What four important measures were passed during Winan's administration? Give the chief provisions of each. Tell of the life, character and ability of Edwin B. Winans. What state institutions were located during Rich's term of office, and where? Where are our state normal schools located? When did Mackinac Island become the property of the state, and

for what purpose? Give an account of the character and achievements of James McMillan. What election frauds in 1894 affected state officials, and how? How did Russell A. Alger serve the nation during President McKinley's administration? Who represent Michigan in the United States senate at present? Name some of Hazen S. Pingree's reforms. Why was his administration tumultuous? Tell what you can of his life. What was the "Immortal Nineteen?" Mention the important legislation of Pingree's governorship. Give the duties of the tax commission. Tell of Michigan's part in the Spanish-American war. What frauds and corruptions were revealed after this war, and how? What honors were accorded Hazen S. Pingree at his death? Give the meaning of primary reform. Tell something of Aaron T. Bliss? State the importance of the primary reform movement during his governorship. State the purpose of the Michigan Employment Institution for the Blind. When and where was it established? What was the chief issue of the state campaign of 1904, and who was elected? Why is there a movement to change the constitution of 1850?



ALPHEUS FELCH. (See Page 187.)

## CHAPTER XVI.

### MICHIGAN TODAY.

**On the Second Day of June, 1835,** Lewis Cass presented to the forthcoming state a seal, upon which was engraved the motto, *Si quaeris peninsulam amoenam circumspice*. (If you wish to see a beautiful peninsula look around you).



THE STATE SEAL.

If this motto was expressive of the sentiments of the state building pioneers, how much more so should it be to us, the heirs of their sacrifices and toil.

Here, as in the other states, marvels unprecedented have

been, and are still being enacted. The seventy years that have passed have witnessed a transformation vast in extent and wonderful in character, surpassing any similar record in the history of civilization.

In 1890, the population of the state passed the two million mark, and according to the last census 2,530,016 had found homes within our borders. Already a quarter of a million more people reside in Michigan than resided in the whole northwest when Michigan sought to be admitted to statehood.

**As We Have Grown in Population**, from the days when Isaac E. Crary was our sole representative in congress, the number has increased, until now we are represented by twelve members in that body.

The state government, as compared with early years, has lost its simplicity. With the creation of new institutions, and the extension of state supervision into fields where, fifty years ago, such interference was unknown, our state government has become vastly more complex and expensive.

**State Institutions** alone have given rise to numerous boards and commissions. The board of regents and the state board of education respectively have charge of the University and the normal schools, as the state board of agriculture has of the Agricultural College, and the **State Boards and Bureaus** experimental work it prosecutes. Other institutions have each been provided with separate and independent boards of control.

In a measure, over all charitable and penal institutions is the state board of correction and charities. Departments have been created and placed in charge of boards or commissioners, supervising railroads, banking, insurance, labor, public health, fisheries, highways, pardons, and food and dairy

products. We have officers empowered to inspect certain commodities, such as salt and illuminating oils.

The game laws are under the special supervision of a state game warden, who, like the inspectors of commodities, has a numerous corps of assistants.

There are still other boards having in charge many special subjects, from forestry and geological survey, to passing upon the qualifications of applicants who desire to engage in various trades and professions.

**The Growth of the Judiciary** has been equal to that in the administrative branch of the government.

There are now eight members of the supreme court and thirty-eight circuits, the latter varying in population from 18,000 to 121,000, and in extent from one to six counties. So great has been the growth in state institutions and governmental activity, that a state tax of \$113,769.56 with a total expenditure of \$166,975.43 from the general fund, in **Expenses of** 1850, has become a state tax of \$3,527,159.61 **State Gov-** with a total expenditure of \$4,270,917.74 from **ernment** the same fund, in 1905. During the same time, the assessed valuation of the state has increased from approximately \$100,000,000 to \$1,600,000,000. Contributions to this vast wealth have been from no one field of industry.

**The Resources of Michigan** have been, and still are, vast and varied. Her forests in their primitive grandeur were unexcelled. Her broad fields are fat with fertility. Her mines are well-nigh inexhaustible. 1,600 miles of coast line give ready access to rich fisheries, and to a commerce of immense proportions.

**Chief Among the Industries** of the state is that of agriculture. While confined to no one section, agriculture has its greatest values in the southern counties. There the great

staples of husbandry are produced, both in variety and profusion.

Michigan today has approximately two hundred thousand farms, comprising more than sixteen million acres, of which more than two-thirds is improved land.

These farms represent an investment in lands and personality of \$745,384,320. This is more than forty-two per cent of the state's total valuation, and more than double the capital invested in the state's manufacturing industries.

Eighty-seven per cent of the farms of Michigan are cultivated by their owners, and they annually produce values ranging from \$150,000,000 to \$175,000,000.

In this enormous total, live stock, hay, and the staple cereal products lead. Potatoes are a crop of much commercial importance in the northern counties. We produce as many as twenty-six million bushels in a year, and take fourth rank among the states in the production of this one important staple.

**Agriculture** Michigan is the first in the production of beans, peas, celery, chicory, and peppermint. She is second in the production of sugar beets and small fruits. In milk production she is surpassed by only the great states of New York, Pennsylvania, and Ohio. As a wool producing state she ranks second among the states east of the Mississippi river. The acreage devoted to the one crop of beans in Michigan for the year 1904, was but little short of the acreage of the average county.

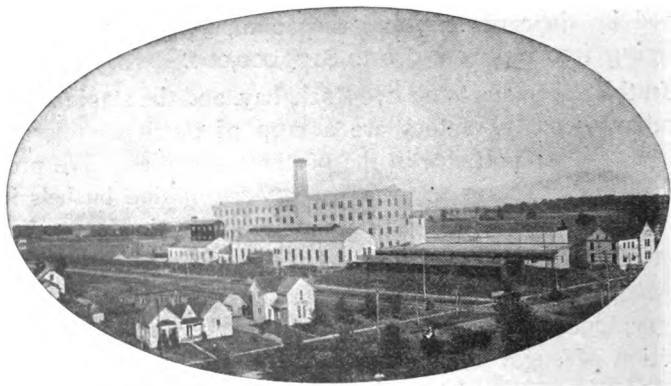
Fruit is likewise an important and growing item among the agricultural products of the state. The apple reaches perfection in most of the counties of the southern half of the state, but with the peach it is fast becoming the specialty of the Lake Michigan shore.



The counties of Berrien, Van Buren, Allegan, Kent, and Oceana leading among the counties in the production of both the apple and the peach. In the first two counties, the grape and the strawberry are likewise crops of much financial importance.

Michigan's average fruit crop has an annual value of not far from eight and one-half million dollars.

The state's poultry and dairy product is rapidly growing in value. The yearly egg product alone has a value of



A BEET SUGAR FACTORY.

seven and one-half million dollars for 1904, a sum which exceeds, by two million dollars, the state's beet sugar, which has been a matter of much state pride.

Great as are the agricultural interests of the state, they are, nevertheless, yielding somewhat to the growth of cities and manufacturing centers.

More than one-half of the people now live in the cities and villages, whereas, not many years ago, two-thirds were upon the farms.

Between the federal census of 1900 and the state census of 1904, the number of farms suffered a marked reduction, the farmer being unable in many instances to compete in the labor market with the wages paid in manufacturing and other lines of industry.

**Next in Importance to Agriculture** among the resources of Michigan has been its wonderful forests. When white men first visited our territory, the occasional prairies of the



WEEDING BEETS IN GRATIOT COUNTY.

southern border were hedged about by the great forests of oak, beech, maple, ash, and elm. Giant walnuts were frequent in the rich bottom lands, and towering whitewoods on the swelling ridges.

From the northward, the majestic pine forests interspersed with hemlock and great belts of hardwood timber, extended as far south as Allegan upon the west and Genesee in the middle east.

#### **Lumber**

For many years, Michigan led in the value of its timber products. Although this place she has been compelled to yield to Wisconsin, she still has a production far surpassing any other single line of manufacturing.

The census of 1904 showed timber products for the year valued at \$40,569,335. To this might be added many million dollars of products which are dependent upon the timber industry.

**The Lumber Industry** is now largely confined to the hard wood, there being but comparatively few mills with a running supply of pine. Even with ever-increasing prices, the business is showing a steady decline.

Its highest point was reached in 1890, when it attained an output of the value of \$83,121,969. In 1900, this had shrunk to \$54,290,520, while four years later, it was reduced by nearly fourteen million more.

The destruction of our forests has been with reckless abandon. The evil effects of the policy that has been tolerated, are now very apparent. It has had an effect upon climatic conditions, as well as in the impairment of a source of state wealth that a duty to future generations requires us to protect.

Although the conditions presented were those which the state was tardy in recognizing, it has at last awakened to the real danger.

**A Forestry Commission** has been created, and a forestry reserve of many thousands of acres in Roscommon and Crawford counties has been set aside upon which the work of reforesting has been begun.

There are vast tracts of northern Michigan that, as yet, have never been found available for any other purpose than forest. The work is only in its infancy, and anything like a successful showing will require long years of patience. It is hoped that a lesson has been

**Forestry**



\*

The iron mines of the state are limited to the western half of the upper peninsula. For many years, the **Iron Mines** Marquette range had a monopoly on iron production. In 1877, the Menominee range began adding its rich contribution. This was augmented by that

learned from the past, and that the future will find Michigan with forests that shall be of increasing value, and with forest laws as judiciously administered as are the forest laws of Europe.

**The Mines of Michigan** have been another of her great storehouses of wealth. For variety and richness of store, the mineral deposits of Michigan are excelled by few, if any, areas of equal extent upon the surface of the globe.

The inception of the iron industry has already been described; from that day to this it has been a business of continuing development.

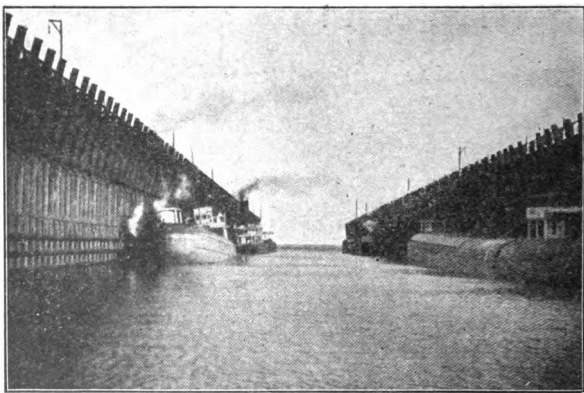
---

\*Pioneer of the Upper Peninsula, now residing at Marquette, widely known and respected.

of the Gogebic range, whose active development began in 1885.

For many years, Michigan had first place in the iron production of the nation and the world. Recently, the soft ores of the Vermilion and Mesaba ranges of Minnesota have given the lead in quantity to that state, although the higher grade of the Michigan product has left the lead in value with Michigan.

In 1902,\* Michigan produced 11,135,215 tons of the value of \$26,695,860. The immensity of this production is better



MAMMOTH ORE DOCKS AT ESCANABA.

realized when we consider that the ore, at 60 per cent pure iron, would make more than 100,000 miles of steel rails, weighing eighty pounds to the yard, more than sufficient to provide a double track around the earth at the equator.

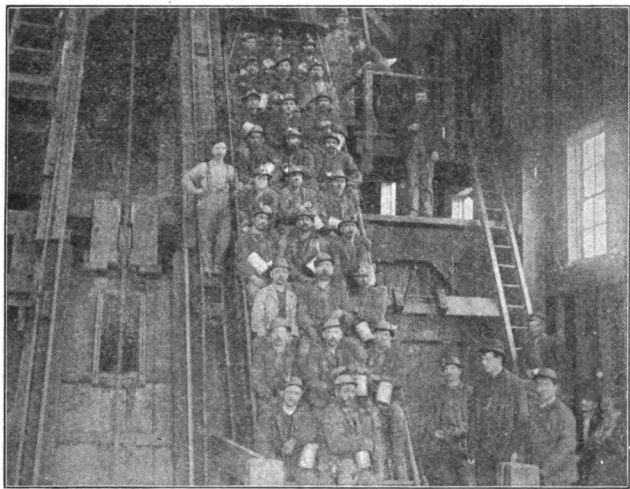
These great properties, as well as those of Minnesota, are now under the control of the United States Steel Company

---

\*Shipments of Michigan iron ore for 1905, from the various ranges, was as follows: From the Marquette 4,210,522 tons, from the Menominee 4,495,451, and from the Gogebic 3,705,207; a total shipment for the year of 12,411,180 tons.

which is itself but a part of the great Standard Oil combination. This great aggregation of capital, now centered in comparatively few hands, has not only acquired the mineral lands, but it owns and controls the railroads over which the ore is drawn to the great ore docks, and the mighty fleets that transport it to the mills and furnaces, which they likewise control in Ohio and Pennsylvania.

Some slight appreciation of the possibilities for wealth



DESCENDING INTO A COPPER MINE.\*

which these vast holdings have for their owners, can be had when we realize that, from Michigan alone, the saving of a cent a ton on the handling of the ore from mine to furnace

---

\*The skip or man car carries about thirty men. As shown in the picture, they are lowered into the shaft, which has about an angle of 38 degrees. The most of the men will descend to a depth of more than 4000 feet before they reach the level or floor from whence they proceed to their work.

means more than one hundred thousand dollars annually in profits.

If Michigan has enjoyed a pre-eminence in the production of iron, her pre-eminence in the field of copper production has been no less marked.

**Copper** is largely the product of the Keweenaw peninsula, a high and rugged point of land that juts midway from the mainland into the great Superior. A belt of dark covered rock, sometimes called the trap or mineral range, **Copper** extends from the Porcupine mountains to the **Mines** extremity of Keweenaw point. It is in this rock that the native, or pure copper, is found. Half way towards the northern extremity of Keweenaw point is located the great Calumet and Hecla mine, which in production and equipment, is one of the mining wonders of the world.

While the Calumet and Hecla is the mine of greatest output, there are others such as the Tamarack, the Osceola, and the Quincy farther south that are rich in production. From 1847 to 1884, Michigan produced from fifty to ninety per cent of the nation's output of copper, although we are now producing but twenty-five per cent.

It is not that Michigan is producing less, but Montana and Arizona are producing more. Up to 1903, the Calumet and Hecla had supplied fifty-five per cent of the Michigan product, and eight per cent of the copper of the world. From 1845 to 1903, Michigan added 3,181,758,801 pounds of copper to the copper stock of the world; 192,299,191 pounds of the money value of \$20,100,425.00, being the product of the latter year.

Today, at the many shafts of the mines mentioned, the copper bearing rock is being brought to the surface from more than a mile below. The rock is borne by train loads to the crushers at Lake Linden.

At Dollar Bay, the copper is smelted and cast into ingots from the size of a paper weight, to bars of seventy and more pounds weight. As in the case of iron, so with copper; the princely dividends torn from the earth are to the profit of New York and Boston. Aside from the wages to labor, but a meager pittance through state taxation is made available for the benefit of the whole people.

**Gold** has been found in various places in the upper peninsula, and mining operations have been conducted on one property in the vicinity of Ishpeming.

The quartz at times discovered has been rich in quality, but is too limited in quantity to encourage the hope that **Gold** . gold mining is to add to our mineral wealth.

In most of the copper mines of the region, silver is likewise a limited product. Small masses of native copper are not unfrequently found, joined to other masses of native silver.

Such are designated as "half breeds," and are sometimes sorted from the major product, as it comes from the crushers, but at an expense nearly equal to the value of the silver obtained.

**Building Stone** of superior quality is found in various parts of the state. The upper peninsula yields the beautiful Portage entry sandstone, and many ornamental stones, including marble, agates, jasper, chalcedony, and chlorastrolites.

To people of the lower peninsula, the peculiarly mottled sandstone from the Ionia quarries is familiar. As yet, the stone industry has not been much developed in Michigan. When it shall be, much stone of a superior quality will be found in many portions of the state.

**Limestone** abounds and is a commercial product in the counties of Emmet, Eaton, Wayne, and Monroe, and could



be made so in many localities of the upper peninsula should the demand make it profitable.

In the production of grindstones, Michigan holds second place among the states, a superior article being taken from the quarries of Huron county. The same county has likewise quarries of slate of good quality.

**Gypsum** in extensive beds exists in the counties of Kent and Iosco. In the former county, they are from ten to twelve square miles in extent.

From the mineral, a business approximating a half million dollars a year is done in the manufacture of land plaster, plaster of paris, alabastine, and kindred products.

**Salt** is the leading mineral product in the lower peninsula. Such is the peculiar geological formation of the state, that in certain sections wells are sunk that strike vast beds of salt. From these wells there flows, or is pumped, brine of the highest quality. This is evaporated, either by artificial heat or the rays of the sun, leaving a residue of pure salt.

The seat of this industry was originally in the Saginaw valley, because the lumber industry there formerly made it economical to use the lumber refuse to evaporate the brine.

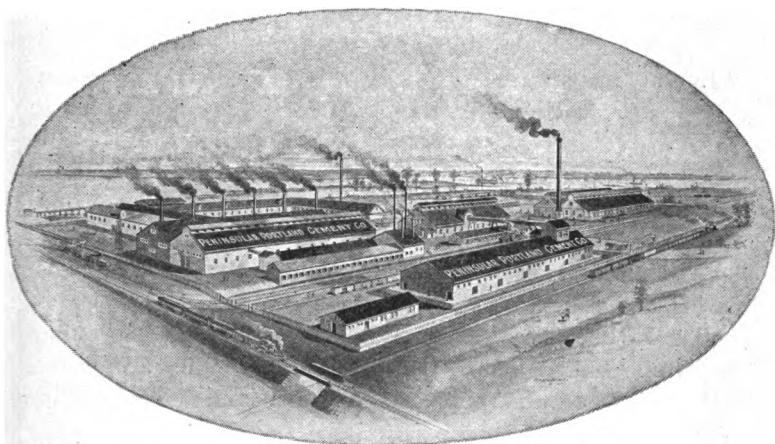
The waning of the lumber business in that region has transferred the supremacy of salt manufacture to the counties of Manistee, St. Clair, and Wayne in the order named. Michigan is the first salt producing state in the Union.

There have been years when her production amounted to seven million barrels, — more than one-third of the national production. In 1905, the state produced 5,936,169 barrels.

It may help us to comprehend the magnitude of this amount by knowing that these barrels, standing side by side, would extend from the city of Jackson to the Straits of Mackinaw.

Although not of as high a quality as exists in neighboring states,

**Bituminous Coal** exists and extends over a large area within the state. 11,300 square miles of the lower peninsula are denominated coal lands. For many years, the mines at Jackson were the ones of principal production. Eaton, Ingham, and Shiawassee counties have also had active mines,



CEMENT PLANT.

but during the last ten years the Saginaw valley has been the field of greatest production. The year 1903 was the year of greatest activity in coal mining, 1,581,346 tons being produced, which had a commercial value of \$2,789,742.

**Michigan's Vast and Varied Natural Resources** have made it possible for her people to easily take advantage of the new discoveries in the chemical world. Among such may be mentioned the soda ash works of Wyandotte, while another industry not more than ten years old in Michigan, but which

is attaining large proportions, is that of the manufacture of hydraulic cement.

**The Immense Beds of Marl**, and the proximity of the other ingredients of cement have advanced Michigan well to the front in the production of this valuable commodity. Factories are located at Fenton, Alpena, Bronson, Elk Rapids, Farwell, Marlborough, Newaygo, Mosherville, Cement City, Union City, Manchester, Chelsea, Coldwater, Quincy, Wyandotte and Bellevue.

According to the 1906 report of the Commissioner of Mineral Statistics 2,618,400 barrels of cement was manufactured in 1905. There is destined to be an increasing demand for the product, and as the state affords a well nigh inexhaustible supply of materials, we may expect the cement industry to become yearly more prominent.

**The Industries of Michigan** are not confined to forests, fields, and mines.

During the year 1902, our hardy fishermen took more than forty-six million pounds of food fish from the great lakes, which had a value approximating one and a half million dollars.

**The Value of the Inland Fisheries** can not, of course, be known. They approach, if they do not surpass, the value of the commercial fisheries. In season, people from far distant states can be found in great numbers upon the picturesque trout streams of the north, or angling for the game fish of its many beautiful lakes.

So important is the subject that the state, through its board of fish commissioners, expends more than eighty thousand dollars annually in fish culture.

By this commission, the lakes and streams are annually replenished with millions of fry from the state hatcheries located at Sault Ste. Marie, Mill Creek, Paris, and Detroit.

So great have been the natural resources of the state that, for many years, the people have been intent upon their development rather than in the prosecution of

**Manufacturing Industries.** In recent years, such industries have advanced with ever increasing strides. The water power of the state is fast being utilized, and its energy, in the form of electric currents, is being applied.

Michigan is not yet a state which leads in her manufactures, but the majority of her people no longer live upon the farms. According to the census of 1904, 82,492, more than half of the people, are the residents of cities and villages.

The great industrial development of the nation has made this result inevitable.

**An Ever Increasing Army** is required to supply the demands of modern luxury and necessity. At the close of the war, in 1865, the value of Michigan manufactures, including the products of mines and fisheries, did not exceed thirty-five million dollars annually.

Today, not including mines and fisheries, the factories of the state will show an annual output of a value of more than four hundred million dollars.

They give daily employment to more than two hundred thousand of our people. In 1904, there were sixty-six lines of manufactures that yielded more than a million dollars each per year.

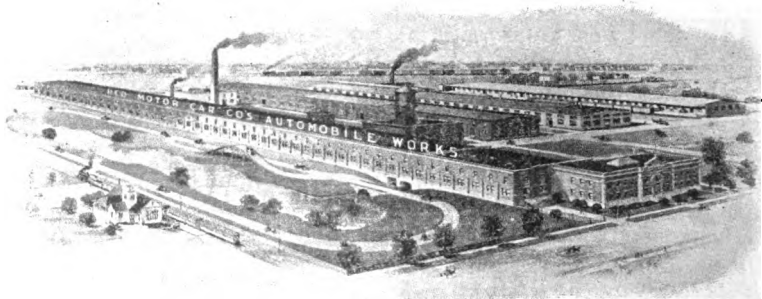
Following the lumber industry already mentioned, other lines showed values as follows: Foundry and machine shop supplies, \$22,427,265; furniture, \$18,421,736; steam railway cars, \$13,467,751; carriages, \$12,101,170; leather, \$9,340,349; chemicals, \$8,957,168; agricultural implements, \$8,717,719; paper and wood pulp, \$7,340,631; stoves and furnaces, \$7,112,874; automobiles, \$6,876,708.

**Detroit Leads** in the value of her manufactured products,

among her leading lines being railway cars, stoves, chemicals, and tobacco.

Grand Rapids is known the world over as the furniture city. It is the leading city of the state in that industry, in which the state holds third place.

Flint is distinctively a carriage town, a line that is likewise of much importance in the towns of Pontiac, Jackson, and Kalamazoo. The last two cities, with Alpena, Cheboygan, Munising, Otsego, and Ypsilanti, are extensively engaged in the manufacture of paper.



A MODERN VEHICLE FACTORY. (See Page 196.)

Ship building is carried on at Bay City, Port Huron, Wyandotte, and Detroit. Saginaw is strong in planing mills and foundry products.

Automobiles are being made in many cities, but are becoming an extensive specialty in the city of Lansing, where the industry for Michigan had its birth.

Belding is the seat of a considerable silk industry, and with Owosso, Battle Creek, Cadillac, Muskegon, and many

other cities, shares in the manufacture of diversified products of large amount.

**The Development of Such Vast Natural Resources** and the prosecution of great industrial enterprises could not but result in the enormous increase of state commerce.

The dreams of the men, who looked forward from 1840, have been more than realized. The year 1904 closed with 8,506 miles of railroad, and many miles of electric road within the state.

**The Gross Earnings of the Steam Roads** reached the stupendous total of \$50,243,690.95. Connected with the steam roads of Michigan alone is an army of 34,036 employees; a number equal to the total population of the county of Wayne in 1864.

**The Growth of the Lake Commerce** has become equally stupendous. Through the locks at the "Soo" passes annually more tonnage than passes through the interocean highway at Suez, and by Detroit more than enters the port of New York.

During the year 1905, freight, to the amount of 44,270,680 tons passed the locks at the "Soo," eighty-eight per cent passing through the American locks. Had this tonnage been transported by rail it would have required 10,325 miles of the average freight cars.

Today there are ships 600 feet in length that take twice  
**Commerce** and three times the largest loads of ten years  
**of the** ago. In June, 1906, the J. Pierpont Morgan, a  
**Lakes** steamer of this class, carried a load of 13,294  
gross tons of iron ore, a load for 330 cars of forty tons capacity each.

**The Great Ordinance of 1787** enjoined that "Morality and the means of education should forever be encouraged."

Michigan as a part of the great empire then created can now, after the lapse of a hundred and twenty years, truly say that she has kept the faith. School houses and church spires have ever been on the front line of her advances.

Today there are 550,000 children enrolled in her common schools, **Our Educational System** and 18,000 are in her higher and special institutions of learning.

The University, established amid hardships and privations, now counts among its four thousand students, men and women from every state, from the nations of the old world, and from the islands of the sea. The same can be said of her agricultural, mining, and normal schools. To maintain her educational system, the state expends more than ten million dollars annually.



JAMES B. ANGELL,  
President University of Michigan.

**Michigan is no Longer Upon the Frontier.** She has become a great state in a great nation. In her history there still lives the charm of romance, the daring of the explorer and the virtue of the pioneer. Her people, proud of progress attained, have their faces toward the future ever hopeful for new and grander achievements. They are not forgetful that many of the sources of their strength lie in the experiences of the past; that from the story of those who have gone before they draw guidance and courage, as from the Great Lakes, a thousand pine clad hills and sunny vales, they draw inspiration for holy thoughts and noble deeds.

## REVIEW.

What is the state motto? Give its meaning. How has the population of Michigan changed? How many representatives have we in congress at present? Name some state boards and give duties of each. Mention other state affairs managed and controlled by boards and commissioners. Describe the present state judiciary. Describe Michigan as an agricultural state and name her chief products. How is the population of Michigan distributed? Tell of the extent and importance of the lumber industry. What is the work of the forestry commission? When and by whom was this commission created? What can you say of our mineral wealth and its development; (a) iron, (b) copper, (c) gold, (d) silver? What building stones are found in Michigan? Locate the best quarries. Of what importance are gypsum beds? Locate the most valuable. Of what value and importance is our salt industry? Where are the best coal beds of the state? Mention and locate valuable chemical manufactures of Michigan. Tell of the value of our fisheries, and the work of the fish commission. For what manufactured products is Detroit noted? Grand Rapids? Flint? Pontiac? Jackson? Kalamazoo? etc. Compare the present state commerce with that of 1850. What is the condition of education in Michigan today?



## INDEX.

---

- Abbott, Edward, 80.  
Abbott, Robert, 156.  
Abraham, Plains of, 60.  
Agricultural College, 210.  
Agriculture, 257.  
Alger, Russell A., 235, 246.  
Algonquin Indians, 21.  
Allouez, Claude, 34, 38.  
Amendments to Constitution,  
195, 197, 223, 240, 247, 251.  
Angell, James B., 272.  
Apples, 258.  
Astor, John Jacob, 127.  
Asylum for Insane Criminals,  
Ionia, 235.  
Australian Ballot, 243.  
Automobiles, 270.
- Bagley, John J., 228, 231.  
Balboa, 11.  
Baldwin, Henry P., 224, 228, 234.  
Bank, Farmers and Mechanics,  
168.  
Bank, First in Michigan, 167.  
Bank of Pennsylvania, 175.  
Bank of Singapore, 172.  
Bank of Kensington, 172.  
Bank of Brest, 172.  
Banks, "Wild Cat," 172.  
Banks, "Red Dogs," 173.  
Barry, John S., 185, 186, 208.  
Bates, Frederick, 103.  
Beans, 258.  
Begole, Josiah W., 234.  
Bellestre, M. de, 60.  
Beet Sugar, 179, 257.  
Bingham, Kingsley S., 206, 207,  
208, 221.  
Bird, Capt. Henry, 85.  
Black Hawk, 140, 142.  
Blair, Austin, 217.  
Bliss, Aaron T., 250.  
Bloody Run, Battle of, 69.
- Boone, Daniel, 79.  
Brant, John, 90, 108.  
Bref, Recit, 19.  
Brebeuf, 27, 28.  
Brock, General, 113, 115.  
Brown, Gen. Joseph W., 141, 147.  
Brule, Etienne, 23.  
Buchanan, James, 218.  
Burrows, Julius C., 245.  
Burt, William A., 188.  
Butler, Colonel, 123.
- Cabot, John and Sebastian, 11.  
Cadillac, Antoine de la Mothe,  
50, 59.  
Calumet and Hecla, 237.  
Campbell, James V., 150, 211.  
Campbell, Captain Donald, 63.  
Canada Company, The, 56.  
Carriages, 270.  
Cartier, Jacques, 15, 16, 17, 18.  
Cass, Lewis, 110, 113, 123, 125,  
135, 162, 182, 194, 212, 218.  
Cavelier, Robert (LaSalle), 41.  
Celery, 258.  
Cement, 268.  
Census, 130, 135, 214, 225, 259,  
260.  
Champlain, 19, 24.  
Chandler, Zachariah, 200, 212,  
229, 230.  
Chapoton, Alexander, 227.  
Charlevoix, 58.  
Chicory, 258.  
Chippewa Indians, 29, 105.  
Cholera, 141.  
Christianity, Isaac P., 211, 230.  
Clark, George Rogers, 79.  
Clay, Henry, 109, 226.  
Clay, General Green, 118.  
Cleveland, Grover, 242.  
Coal, 267.  
Commerce, 257, 271.

- Conger, Omar D., 234.  
 Cooley, Thomas M., 211.  
 Copper, 189, 263.  
 Cortez, 11.  
 Courcelles, 33.  
 Crapo, Henry H., 221.  
 Crary, Isaac E., 150, 157.  
 Croghan, Major, 119.  
 Crosswell, Charles M., 232.  
 Custer, George A., 228.  
 Cutler, Dr. Manassah, 96.  
  
 Dablon, Claude, 34.  
 Dairy Products, 259.  
 Dalzell, Captain, 69.  
 Dane, Nathan, 98.  
 Daumont, 35.  
 Deaf School at Flint, 192.  
 DeGalnee, 42.  
 Dejean, Phillip, 74.  
 DeMonts, 20.  
 DeNarvaez, 11.  
 DePeyster, Major, 84, 88.  
 DeSoto, 11.  
 Dickinson, Don. M., 241.  
 Dickson, Captain Robert, 119.  
 Dobbins, Daniel, 119.  
 Dodge, Colonel Henry, 141.  
 Dollier, Francois, 42.  
 Dorchester, Lord, 88.  
 Doty, James Duane, 134.  
 Douglas, Maj. Ephraim, 87.  
 Duhuissou, Siena, 58.  
 DuLhut, Daniel, 48, 49, 55.  
  
 Educational Funds, 158, 198.  
 Employment Institution for  
     Blind, Saginaw, 251.  
 Etherington, Captain George, 71.  
 Everett, P. M., 189.  
  
 Fallen Timbers, Battle of, 92.  
 Farms, 226.  
 Farnsworth, Elon, 159.  
 Felch, Alpheus, 187.  
 Ferry, Thomas W., 224, 234.  
 Findlay, Colonel, 110.  
 Fisheries, 268.  
 Fletcher, William A., 143, 159.  
 Florida, Peninsula of, 11.  
  
 Forests, 259.  
 Forestry Commission, 260.  
 Fox Indians, 58.  
 French and Indian War, 59.  
 Frenchtown, Battle of, 116.  
 Frontenac, 38, 50.  
 "Frost Bitten" Convention, 153.  
 Fruit, 258.  
 Fulton Line, 145.  
 Furniture, 270.  
  
 Galvez, Bernardo, 86.  
 Gazette, Detroit, 128.  
 Geological Survey, 161.  
 Germain, Lord George, 78.  
 Gibault, M., 80.  
 Gilpin, Henry D., 144.  
 Girty, Simon.  
 Gitche Gomee, 29, 32, 34.  
 Gladwin, Major, 63 to 70.  
 Gold, 265.  
 Gordon, James Wright, 185.  
 Grapes, 259.  
 Graves, Major, 117.  
 Graves, Benjamin F., 211.  
 Greenley, William L., 187.  
 Griffin, John, 103.  
 Griffin, The, 44, 47.  
 Griswold, Stanley, 103.  
 Grosvenor, Ebenezer O., 227.  
 Gypsum, 266.  
  
 Haldimand, Gov. Gen., 84, 87.  
 Hamilton, Henry, 76.  
 Hamilton, Alexander, 215.  
 Hanks, Lieut., 102.  
 Harmar, General Joseph, 91.  
 Harris Line, 145.  
 Harrison, William Henry, 101,  
     102, 108, 115.  
 Hayes, John, 189.  
 Heald, Captain, 115.  
 Hennepin, Father, 45.  
 Henry, Alexander, 71.  
 Henry, Patrick, 79.  
 Hickox, Rev. Joseph, 127.  
 Home for Feeble Minded and  
     Epileptic, Lapeer, 244.  
 Horner, John, 149.

- Hospital for Insane, Newberry, 244.  
 Houghton, Douglass, 162, 190.  
 Howard, Benjamin C., 147.  
 Howard, Henry, 156.  
 Howard, Jacob M., 221, 222.  
 Hudson, Henry, 20.  
 Hull, William, 103, 109, 110.  
 Hundred Associates, Company of the, 23.  
 Huntington, Samuel, 103.  
 Huron Indians, 21, 29, 30, 31.  
  
 Immortal Nineteen, 248.  
 Industrial Home for Girls, Adrian, 233.  
 Industrial School for Boys, Lansing, 211.  
 Insane Asylum, Kalamazoo, 192.  
 Insane Asylum, Pontiac, 229.  
 Insane Asylum, Traverse City, 233.  
 Iron, 261, 262.  
 Iroquois Indians, 21, 22, 30.  
 Irving, Washington, 180.  
  
 Jackson, Andrew, 168.  
 Jay's Treaty, 92.  
 Jefferson, Thomas, 96, 215.  
 Jerome, David H., 232.  
 Jesuits, 26, 27, 29, 30, 34, 45.  
 Jogues, Isaac, 28.  
 Johnson, Sir William, 72.  
 Johnson, Richard M., 122.  
 Joliet, Louis, 38, 39.  
 Joncaire, Chas. F. Chabert de, 100.  
  
 Kearney, Phil., 195.  
 Kingsbury, Colonel, 110.  
  
 LaCaron, 22, 27.  
 LaForet, 58.  
 LaHoutan, Baron, 50.  
 Lalement, Charles, 27.  
 Land Grants, 238.  
 Langlade, Charles, 60.  
 LaSalle, 41, 48.  
 Lernoult, Major, 81.  
 LeRoy, Daniel, 156.  
  
 Lewis, Colonel, 116.  
 Limestone, 265.  
 Lincoln, Abraham, 217.  
 Liquor Traffic, 232.  
 Livingston, Robert, 54.  
 Local Option Law, 241.  
 Locks at the "Soo," 233.  
 Lothrop, George V. N., 242.  
 Luce, Cyrus G., 240.  
 Lumber, 225, 260.  
 Lusson, Sieur de Saint, 35, 36.  
 Lyon, Lucius, 150, 183, 184.  
  
 Macomb, General Alexander, 113.  
 Madison, Major, 117.  
 Magna Charta, 75.  
 Manning, Randolph, 211.  
 Manufacturing, 269.  
 Marl, 268.  
 Married Women, 190, 197.  
 Marquette, James, 34, 38, 40.  
 Marsac, Captain, 141.  
 Martin, George, 211.  
 Mason, Stevens T., 137, 142, 144, 150, 180.  
 Mason, John T., 136.  
 Maumee, Battle of the, 91.  
 McArthur, Colonel, 110, 113, 123.  
 McClelland, Robert, 199, 202, 205.  
 McCoy, Isaac, 133.  
 McDougall, Major, 68.  
 McDowell, Colonel, 123.  
 McMillan, James, 244.  
 Mesnard, Rene, 31, 32.  
 Mexico, Gulf of, 11.  
 Miami Indians, 49.  
 Military Scandal, 247.  
 Miller, Lieut. Col., 112.  
 Miner Law, 243.  
 Mining School, Houghton, 235.  
 Mizner, L. B., 178.  
 Mohawk Indians, 29.  
 Monguagon, Battle of the, 112.  
 Monteith, Rev. John, 127, 128.  
 Montreal, 18, 21.  
 Moravian Indians, Massacre of, 85.  
 Moravian Road, The, 86.  
 Mormons, 193.  
 Morrell, George, 158.

- Morris Canal and Banking Com-  
 pany, 175.  
 Muir, Major, 112.  
 Mundy, Edward, 150.  
 Navarre, Robert, 58.  
 New State Capitol, 227.  
 Newspapers, 139.  
 Newspaper, First, 107.  
 New France, 33.  
 Nicollet, Jean, 24, 28.  
 Normal School, Mt. Pleasant,  
 244.  
 Normal School, Marquette, 244.  
 Normal School, Kalamazoo, 244.  
 Normal School, Ypsilanti, 193.  
 Northwest, The Great, 95, 204.  
 Norvel, John, 150, 185.  
 Old Glory, 93.  
 Ontario, Lake, 22.  
 Ordinance of 1787, 96, 216, 271.  
 Ottawa Indians, 30, 105.  
 Palmer, Thomas W., 234.  
 Panic of 1837, 170.  
 Parsons, Samuel H., 98.  
 Parsons, Andrew, 203, 211.  
 Patriot's War, 177.  
 Patton, John, Jr., 245.  
 Peaches, 258.  
 Pears, 258.  
 Peppermint, 258.  
 Period, The Heroic, 32.  
 Perry's Victory, 121.  
 Perry, Oliver Hazard, 120.  
 Pierce, John D., 157.  
 Pierce, Franklin, 187.  
 Pingree, Hazen S., 246.  
 Pizarro, 11.  
 Pontchartrain, Count, 51, 53.  
 Pontgrave, 20.  
 Pontiac, 62, 73, 108.  
 Porter, George B., 138, 144.  
 Porter, Augustus S., 183.  
 Porteret, Pierre, 40.  
 Potato Patch Scheme, 247.  
 Pottawattamie 'Indians, 105, 132.  
 Poultry, 259.  
 Powell, William Dummer, 89.  
 Primary Reform, 250.  
 Prison, Marquette, 235.  
 Pritchett, Kintzing, 156.  
 Proctor, Colonel Henry, 116.  
 Quebec, 17, 21.  
 Railroad Age, 164.  
 Railroad, Central and Southern,  
 176.  
 Railroads in 1852, 213.  
 Raisin, Massacre of the, 118.  
 Ransom, Ephaphroditus, 159,  
 187.  
 Raymbault, Charles, 28.  
 Reed, Ebenezer, 128.  
 Reformatory at Ionia, 232.  
 Repentguy, Chevalier de, 59.  
 Revolution, War of the, 77.  
 Rich, John T., 243.  
 Richard, Father Gabriel, 106, 128,  
 142.  
 Richlieu, 21-23-26.  
 River, Mississippi, 13.  
 River, St. Lawrence, 17, 20.  
 Roberts, Captain Charles, 112.  
 Rogers, Major Robert, 60, 62, 93.  
 Roosevelt, Theodore, 251.  
 Rush, Richard, 147.  
 Salaries of State Officers, 199.  
 Salem Case, 223.  
 Salt, 225, 266.  
 Sargent, Winthrop, 98, 99.  
 Schlosser, Ensign, 70.  
 School for the Blind, Lansing,  
 233.  
 Schoolcraft, Henry, 162.  
 Seward, William H., 200.  
 Shaler, Charles, 149.  
 Shearer, James, 227.  
 Sheldon, John C., 128.  
 Ship Building, 270.  
 Sibley, Solomon, 100.  
 Silk Industry, 270.  
 Sinclair, Major Patrick, 83, 87.  
 Sioux Indians, 31.  
 Slavery, 97, 204, 217.  
 Soldiers' Home, Grand Rapids,  
 235.

- "Soo" Canal, 184, 201, 226.  
State Capitol, Location of, 192.  
State Public School, Coldwater, 228.  
State Seal, 254.  
St. Clair, General Arthur, 91, 98, 99.  
Steuben, Baron, 87.  
Stockbridge, Francis B., 241.  
Stone, Building, 265.  
Strang, James J., 193.  
Strawberries, 259.  
Sugar Beets, 179, 258.  
Surrender of Detroit, 114.  
Symmes, John C., 98.  
  
Taylor, Zachary, 194.  
Tax Commission, 248.  
Taxation, Equal, 247.  
Tecumseh, 107, 108, 112.  
Thames, Battle of the, 123.  
Tippecanoe, Battle of, 109.  
Toledo War, The, 147, 148.  
Tonty, Henry de, 46, 55.  
Tunnel at Port Huron, 214.  
Turnbull, Captain George, 74.  
Turner, James M., 242.  
  
"Under the Oaks," 208.  
Underground Railway, 205.  
  
University of Michigan, 102, 163, 272.  
Upper Peninsula, 151.  
  
Van Horn, Major, 111.  
Varnum, James M., 98.  
Verrazano, John, 12, 15.  
Vigo, Colonel Francis, 82.  
Visger, Jacob, 100.  
  
Walk-in-the-water (Steamship), 129.  
War, The Civil, 215, 216.  
War, Spanish American, 246.  
Warner, Fred M., 251.  
Wasson, Ojibwa Chief, 68.  
Wayne, General Anthony, 91.  
Whiskey Ring, 229.  
White, Peter, 261.  
Williams, John R., 141.  
Winans, Edwin B., 242.  
Wisner, Moses, 209.  
Woodbridge, William, 126, 129, 179, 182, 185, 203.  
Woodward, Augustus Brevoort, 103, 128, 134.  
Wool, 258.  
Wyandotte Indians, 105.  
  
Zeisberger, David, 85.











APR 11 1933

